Upshur Family
In
Virginia

Gc
929.2
Up67u
1417531

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

PARTE OF CAMBRIDGE SHIRE

PARTE OF HERTFORDE SHIRE

PARTE OF ESSEX

PART OF SOUTHREY

PARTE OF KENT

HAVERILL

CLARE

Hadstock

Chesterford m

Chesterford pua

Hempsteade

FRESHWELL HV

Royston

Barkley

Wendon Lofts

Wendon pua

VTLISFORDE HV

Sanford pua

Sanford mar

Birkley

Debden

Walden

Wimbishe

Saffron Walden

Newport

Clavering

Bardfield pua

Bardfield Saling

Braintree

Stebbing

Panfield

Dunmow

Hatfield forest

Bishopsterford

Thorley

Widford

Sabridgeworth

Hallingbury m

Hallingbury pua

Heydon redinge

Leythorn redinge

Hadham redinge

Wyre

Gilderdon

Hertford

Hertford Stone bridge

Stanstead

Pondon

Ryden

Pondon m

Manuden lower

Manuden upper

Bobbingworth

Shellow

Norton mandeuil

Chipping Ongar

Stanford rivers

Stapleford tawney

Capthall

Chipping Ongar

Stanford rivers

Stapleford tawney

Stapleford abbots

Hog bridge

Lambourne

Chigwell

Hainault

Woodford

Woodford bridge

Waltham forest

Waltham stowe

Layton

Wansted

Stratford langthorne

Ilford pua

Ilford m

Dagenham

Barkinge

W Ham

E Ham

Stepney

Black Wall

Rotherhith

Southwarke

Deptford

Greenwich

Wapping

The bridge

Lambeth

Kingston

Chertsey

Egham

Staines

Windsor

Colnbrook

Hounslow

Harmondsworth

Uxbridge

Harrow

Pinner

Watford

Rickmansworth

Chesham

Amersham

Wycombe

Marlow

Henley

Reading

Basingstoke

Odiham

Farnham

Guildford

Godalming

Chertsey

Egham

Staines

Windsor

Colnbrook

Hounslow

Harmondsworth

Uxbridge

Harrow

Pinner

Watford

Rickmansworth

Chesham

Amersham

Wycombe

Marlow

Henley

Reading

Basingstoke

Odiham

Farnham

Guildford

Godalming

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 01434 8491

SAXTON'S MAP OF ESSEX, 1576

Birthplace of Arthur Upcher, the immigrant

M. L.

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

Upshur Family
in
Virginia

ABEL PARKER UPSHUR I
(1790-1844)
Jurist and Statesman
From a lithograph in Charles Fenderich's Portfolio of Living American Statesmen

Upshur Family in Virginia

BY

JOHN ANDREWS UPSHUR

THE DIETZ PRESS, INCORPORATED
Richmond, Virginia
1955

COPYRIGHT, 1955, BY JOHN ANDREWS UPSHUR

DESIGNED AND PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
BY THE DIETZ PRESS, INCORPORATED, AT RICHMOND, VIRGINIA

1417531

Dedicated
to
ARTHUR UPCHER
Who emigrated from England to America
during the seventeenth century and
became the progenitor of the Upshur
Family in Virginia.

Old Bennett Store $10.00 9-23-'67 P.O. 44012

INTRODUCTION

THE Eastern Shore of Virginia,[1] known to the early English colonists as the "Plantacon of Acchawmacke," was the first home of the Upshur Family in the New World. That peninsula, comprising the present counties of Accomack and Northampton, is joined to the Eastern Shore of Maryland and separated from the mainland of Virginia by Chesapeake Bay. It was first settled in 1614 and in 1634 became one of the eight original shires of Virginia. At first the area was called Accomack, an Indian name meaning "on-the-other-side-of-the-water-place." The name was changed in 1642/3 to Northampton and in 1662/3 the peninsula was divided into two counties; the lower part retained the name of Northampton and the upper part adopted the original name of Accomack.

Arthur Upcher, the first of the *Upshur* line in Virginia, was on the Eastern Shore in 1640/1[2] and it is probable that he was living on that peninsula as early as 1637.[3] From the time of Arthur's arrival on the Eastern Shore until after 1800 that remote and isolated peninsula was the home of the Upshur Family in Virginia. Except for the few who departed to make their home in the neighboring counties of Maryland, all of

---

[1] For history of the Eastern Shore of Virginia, Ralph T. Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore* (Richmond, 1951), published by Va. Hist. Soc.; Jennings Cropper Wise, *Ye Kingdome of Accawmacke or the Eastern Shore of Virginia in the Seventeenth Century* (Richmond, 1911); Susie M. Ames, *Studies of The Virginia Eastern Shore in the Seventeenth Century* (Richmond, 1940).

[2] Northampton County, Va., Court Records, Orders, Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1640-45, 28. It should be noted that dates such as "1640/1" refer to the period from Jan. 1 to March 24, 1641. According to the Old Style Calendar (abandoned in 1752) the new year did not begin until March 25.

[3] See 20*n* and related text.

Arthur's descendants for five generations remained residents of Virginia's Eastern Shore.

This permanence of residence limited the genealogical search to a comparatively small area and one in which the county court records, those of Accomack and Northampton Counties, are continuous since 1632/3. Although the permanence of residence of the Upshur Family and the availability of exceptional records facilitated the search for genealogical information, nevertheless, these same conditions tended to increase the difficulty of compiling the available data. Separated from the mainland by Chesapeake Bay, the Eastern Shore developed independently from the rest of Virginia. For over two hundred years after the Eastern Shore was settled an order of social aristocracy flourished there which differed from that of any other section of America. This resulted in marriage and intermarriage among the leading families to such an extent that it is difficult to write a genealogy of one without including a genealogy of all. However, in this volume the author has concentrated on those bearing the Upshur surname and has devoted only limited space to show connections with allied families including Bayly, Bowdoin, Browne, Custis, Eyre, Hill, Kendall, Littleton, Michael, Parker, Revell, Robins, Savage, Scarburgh, Smith, Stith, Stockley, Teackle, Thorogood, West, Whittington, Yardley and others. The progenitors of many of these families were first settlers of Virginia's Eastern Shore.

The need of a published genealogy of the Upshur Family in Virginia has long been felt by many of its members who, as the years pass on, find it more and more difficult, if not impossible, to place themselves accurately in the family orbit in relation to other members of the family both past and present. This want led the author a number of years ago to undertake, as time and opportunity permitted, the preparation of this volume in which

he has endeavored to give the most accurate genealogical data available.

Much of the material contained in this genealogy was taken from family records compiled by Thomas Teackle Upshur II[4] during the last quarter of the nineteenth century. Many of his notes came from previously unrecorded information obtained through conversation and correspondence with elderly members of the family and others who have long since passed away; many of his records came from old family papers, letters, and Bibles which are no longer extant, and from ancient tombstones whose inscriptions are no longer legible. Most of his data came from the early court records of Northampton and Accomack Counties which he spent years in restoring and transcribing, thus helping to preserve the oldest continuous court records in America.

Of considerable help in compiling this genealogy was *Virginia's Eastern Shore* by Ralph T. Whitelaw whose collaborator was Anne Floyd Upshur, daughter of Thomas Teackle Upshur II. *Virginia's Eastern Shore* is a comprehensive, documented history of property ownership, homes, and families of Accomack and Northampton Counties in the seventeenth, eighteenth, and nineteenth centuries. It includes descriptions and illustrations of many early Upshur homes and should be of special interest to every member of the family.

The Roman numerals following certain names have been added for convenience of identification, for example, William Brown Upshur III, Thomas Teackle Upshur V, Edmund Scarburgh IV, etc. As a further convenience in recording additional births, marriages, deaths, and other genealogical data, several blank pages have been included at the end of this volume.

---

[4] Thomas Teackle Upshur II (1844-1910), genealogist, of Northampton County, Va. Many of his unpublished manuscripts are now at "Brownsville," Nassawadox, Northampton County, Va.

INTRODUCTION

Reference copies of this genealogy of the Upshur Family will be found in the Virginia State Library, the Congressional Library, and in the libraries of the College of William and Mary, University of Virginia, Virginia Historical Society, Maryland Historical Society, Sons of the American Revolution, and Daughters of the American Revolution.

Williamsburg, Virginia

JOHN ANDREWS UPSHUR

CONTENTS

Page

INTRODUCTION vii

CHAPTER I

THE IMMIGRANTS 3

CHAPTER II

ARTHUR UPSHUR I 6

CHAPTER III

ARTHUR UPSHUR II 20

CHAPTER IV

ABEL UPSHUR I 31

CHAPTER V

UPSHUR'S NECK BRANCH 40

CHAPTER VI

VAUCLUSE BRANCH 53

CHAPTER VII

LEE'S NECK BRANCH 85

CHAPTER VIII

ROSE COTTAGE BRANCH 102

CHAPTER IX

BROWNSVILLE BRANCH 128

APPENDIX 145

INDEX 205

ILLUSTRATIONS

Abel Parker Upshur I (1790-1844) . . . . . FRONTISPIECE

Facing Page

Warwick, Accomack County 6

Vaucluse, Northampton County 53

Commander George Parker Upshur (1799-1852) 71

Major-General William Peterkin Upshur (1881-1943) . . . 76

Cedar Grove, Northampton County 85

Rose Cottage, Accomack County 102

Captain Caleb Littleton Upshur I (1807-85) 112

John Andrews Upshur, Jr. 124

Brownsville, Northampton County 128

Thomas Teackle Upshur II (1844-1910) 134

Sheringham Hall, Norfolk, England 146

Rear-Admiral John Henry Upshur (1823-1917) 169

Upshur Family
in
Virginia

Chapter I

THE IMMIGRANTS

ABOUT 1637 Arthur Upcher, a boy of twelve, came to Virginia from Essex County, England.[5] Perhaps his original home was Colchester or one of the nearby towns of Coggeshall, Bocking, Dedham or Wormingford where Upchers[6] were living at that time. Upon his arrival in Virginia Arthur went to the "Plantacon of Acchawmacke" on the Eastern Shore[7] where he established his home in the New World.

Arthur Upcher may have immigrated to Virginia from England by way of Holland, the West Indies, New Netherlands, or New

---

[5] Arthur Upcher (Upshur), the immigrant, is buried at "Warwick" in Upshur's Neck, Accomack County, Va. The inscription on his tombstone states that he was born in Essex County, Eng. "Upshur Family in Virginia," *William and Mary College Quarterly Historical Magazine*, 2d ser., 22 (1942), 418-25.

[6] Of the Upcher Family in England there are numerous records indicating that by the beginning of the sixteenth century this name was generally spelled Upcher although earlier Essex records show many variations including Upchare, Upshire, Upshor, and others. Harleian Soc., *Visitations of Essex* (London, 1878-79), XIII, XIX, *passim*; British Records Soc., *The Index Library*, various volumes; C. W. Bardsley, *A Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames* (London, 1901); Appendix, Note I.

[7] The name of Arthur Upshott (Upcher, Upshur) appears on Capt. William Stone's application for a land patent in 1640/1. Northampton Orders, Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1640-45, 28. The name of Arthur Upshott appears again on Thomas Freshwater's patent dated 1664 for land on the north side of the Rappahannock River. The name also appears on two 1665 patents for land in Gloucester County granted to Maj. John Smith and Maj. Thomas Walker respectively. Nell Marion Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers; Abstracts of Virginia Land Patents and Grants, 1623-1800* (Richmond, 1934), 443, 545, 555-6. By tradition Arthur Upshur returned to England for a visit after he had become a successful Virginia planter. If this tradition is true the above patents in 1664 and 1665 may have been granted on headrights claimed upon his return to Virginia. Often men of prominence in the colony, through a voyage or repeated voyages to England, appear as headrights of friends and relatives who obtained land thereby due. However, Capt. William Stone had already claimed headrights on Arthur Upshott in 1640/1, and Arthur Upshott's name appears frequently in the records of the Eastern Shore during 1663-65, indicating a continuous residence there at that time, so it is possible that the patents issued in 1664 and 1665 were for headrights unlawfully claimed, not an uncommon occurrence in those times. *Ibid.*, xxv.

England. Considerable trade was carried on between the Eastern Shore and those parts of the world, and ships which carried cargoes often brought new settlers.[8] Arthur could have come to Virginia from any of those places of temporary abode as well as directly from England.

For many years following his immigration to Virginia Arthur Upcher's name appeared in the records most frequently as *Upshott*,[9] but his name ultimately became established as *Upshur,* a spelling to which his descendants have adhered. This diversity in spelling was not unusual, for in early colonial times the sound of the spoken word was the principal guide to the spelling of both personal and place names. It is not uncommon to find the name of the same individual appearing in several variations even in one brief record.

The parentage of Arthur Upcher is at present unknown,[10] however, no comprehensive search of the English records has been made. Nothing is known of his life prior to his arrival in Virginia. According to family tradition,[11] Arthur fled from his home in England to escape the persecutions of his stepmother and was accompanied to Virginia by an older brother, Abel. Upon their arrival off the capes of Virginia the boys separated; Arthur went to the Eastern Shore and Abel went to the Western Shore of Virginia and settled in that part later known as Gloucester County.

---

[8] Wise, *Ye Kingdome of Accawmacke*, ch. 6

[9] Early court records of Northampton and Accomack Counties.

[10] On Feb. 13, 1621/2, a marriage license bond was granted to Thomas Upcher, tailor, of Colchester, Essex County, Eng., and Anne Ayre, spinster, dau. of Robert Ayre, innkeeper, deceased, at St. Leonards Lane, London. Harleian Soc., *Allegations for Marriage Licenses issued by the Bishop of London, 1611-1828* (London, 1887), II, 96. Thomas Upcher, supra, may have been the same Thomas Upcher who was admitted a free burgess of Colchester in 1646 and was the progenitor of the Upchers of "Sheringham Hall," Norfolk, Eng. It is possible that he was also the father of Arthur Upcher who immigrated to Virginia. For Upcher lineage, H. Pirie-Gordon, ed., *Burke's Landed Gentry* (London, 1937), 2311-12; Joseph Jackson Howard and Frederick Arthur Crisp, *Visitations of England and Wales*, (1895), III, 25; Appendix, Notes I, II.

[11] Thomas Teackle Upshur II, "A Sketch of the Upshur Family . . . 1887." A copy of this manuscript is part of the Quinby Papers, Alderman Library, U. Va.

No record has been found of the traditional Abel Upcher. The Gloucester County court records were burned in 1820 and the parish registers and vestry books of Petsworth and Kingston Parishes contain no entries earlier than 1677. However, early church and other extant records show that persons of similar surname were living in Gloucester and neighboring counties in the seventeenth century. Jeremiah Upshaw[12] of Gloucester was listed as a headright in 1667; John Upshar[13] and Diana, his wife, were living in Lancaster County on the Corotoman River in 1670 or earlier; John Upshere[14] and family were living in St. Peter's Parish, New Kent County, in 1701 or earlier; "William Upshaw, Gent., planter,"[15] was living in Gloucester County before 1700. It is from this William Upshaw that the Upshaw Family claim descent, and members of that family continue to spell the name *Upshaw*. The foregoing persons could well have been descendants of the Abel Upcher of tradition.

Other members of the Upcher Family may have emigrated from England to America in the seventeenth century for early records furnish evidence that persons of similar name embarked for or were in the colonies at that period.[16] However, in this genealogy all attention will be devoted to the descendants of Arthur Upcher, hereafter designated as Arthur Upshur I, who settled on the Eastern Shore and became the progenitor of the Upshur Family in Virginia. See chart at the end of chapter IV.

---

[12] *Records of Colonial Gloucester* (Newport News, Va., 1946), I, 7, compiled by Polly Cary Mason.

[13] Lancaster County, Va., Court Records, Deeds, Etc., 1666-82, 102.

[14] *Vestry Book and Register of St. Peter's Parish, New Kent and James City Counties, Virginia, 1684-1786* (Richmond, 1937), *passim.*

[15] "The Upshaw Family of Essex," *Wm. and Mary Quar.*, 2d ser., 18(1938), 64-104.

[16] Richard Upcott, age 26, took passage to Virginia from Gravesend, Eng., in June 1635. *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 3(1849), 184. Michael Upchurch is listed as an immigrant to Virginia in 1654. George Cabel Greer, *Early Virginia Immigrants, 1623-1666* (Richmond, 1912), 336. He was probably the same Michael Upchurch who was in Surry County, Va., as early as 1656. Surry County, Va., Court Records, Orders, Deeds, Wills, 1645-72, 158. Thomas Upshaw is listed among the officers and soldiers engaged in the American Expedition or in Jamaica who, during 1656, applied for arrears of pay. *Calendar of State Papers, Colonial Series, 1574-1660* (London, 1860), 454. An Upsall Family was living in or near Boston, 1630-44. *The N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, 1(1847), 195.

Chapter II

ARTHUR UPSHUR I

(1624-1709)

ARTHUR UPSHUR I, the pioneer of the family on the Eastern Shore of Virginia, was born about 1624 in Essex County, England. This is shown by the inscription on his tombstone which may still be seen at "Warwick,"[17] his last home, situated on the upper part of Upshur's Neck near Quinby, Accomack County, Virginia.

Arthur came to the Eastern Shore of Virginia about 1637 when he was twelve years old. He first may have indentured himself to Captain William Stone for a period long enough to pay the cost of his transportation from England; according to tradition he bound himself for the first year to Captain Stone for a hogshead of tobacco.

Captain Stone included Arthur's name in the list of headrights in his application for a patent for land in 1640/1. This court record dated January 11, 1640/1, is the earliest documentary evidence that has been found of Arthur Upshur's presence in Virginia.[18] His name was here recorded by the Clerk of the Court as Upshott,[19] and this spelling of the name continued in the records for many years but finally stabilized as Upshur. Since headrights often arrived in the colony some time before

---

[17] Named for Warwick, Eng., birthplace of Arthur Upshur's last wife, Mary (Clarke) Hamond-Jacob-Upshur. Upshur, "A Sketch of the Upshur Family . . . 1887." For description of "Warwick," Appendix, Note III.

[18] Northampton Orders, Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1640-45, 28.

[19] *Ibid.*

WARWICK, ACCOMACK COUNTY
Arthur Upshur I was buried here

the patentee entered claim for land thereby due,[20] the application of Captain Stone in 1640/1 tends to substantiate the assumption that Arthur arrived about 1637. At that time Captain William Stone, later to be commissioned Governor of Maryland, lived between Hungars and Mattawoman Creeks in that area subsequently known as Wilsonia Neck,[21] so it was probably there that Arthur spent the first years of his young manhood in Virginia.

On October 28, 1651, Arthur received his first certificate for a patent for land on headrights assigned to him for transporting to Virginia John Roberts, George Roberts, Susanna Dowrigg, Richard Starnell, Mary Joiner, and Mary Jones.[22] This patent dated May 10, 1652, was for 300 acres located at the head of Occohannock Creek, bounded on the north by the land of William Taylor and on the south by a small branch which separated Arthur's land from that of Roger Johns.[23]

Although little is known of the early life of Arthur Upshur I, it can be assumed that he had married by the time he received his first patent for he was then about twenty-seven years old. In early colonial days a wife was an economic necessity and most men married and established a home by their early twenties. Arthur's case probably was not an exception to the rule of early marriage. Moreover, the probable dates of birth of his sons, John and Arthur, to be discussed later, lend support to the belief that Arthur had contracted an early marriage. No clue to the name of his presumed first wife has been found but she must have died prior to 1655, the year Arthur married Mary (Hardwige?) Risden, relict of Phillip Risden, formerly of London.[24]

---

20 Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers,* xxv.

21 Wise, *Ye Kingdome of Accawmacke,* 106, 108; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore,* I, 318-19.

22 Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1651-54, 47.

23 Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers,* 286.

24 Thomas Teackle Upshur II wrote that Phillip Risden, Gent., of London, came to Virginia about 1652, and that with him came Mary Hardwige who it was suspected became Mrs. Risden. In this connection it should be noted that Arthur Upshur I received

Arthur's marriage to the Widow Risden is the first of which there is documentary proof. On May 7, 1655, he applied to the court for letters of administration on the estate of Mr. Risden, "lately deceased," whose widow he had married. Arthur administered on that estate,[25] a not uncommon occurrence at that time, for second husbands frequently administered on the estates of their predecessors.

On March 11, 1655/6, Arthur received his second patent for land, 300 acres adjoining his first dividend on Occohannock Creek, for transporting to Virginia Mary Risden, Jane Risden, Landina Risden, Anthony Carpenter, Phillip Soccohacke, and John Abbott.[26]

On October 20, 1661, Arthur received his third patent for land on Occohannock Creek. This included his two previous patents comprising 600 acres, plus an additional 100 acres for transporting two persons (names not recorded), thus giving him a total of 700 acres in this tract.[27]

Arthur perhaps lived on his Occohannock plantation for approximately thirteen years and it is believed that his four known children and possibly others were born there during this time. While enlarging his holdings Arthur must have developed this 700-acre tract considerably for in 1664 a court record attests that it included "Edifices buildings and fenceing,"[28] an indication of a substantial plantation.

It is believed that Mary (Hardwige?) Risden-Upshur died about 1662 for in 1663 Arthur married Mary (Clarke) Hamond-

---

headrights in 1655 on Mary Risden and her two daughters. Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers,* 330. This Mary Risden was unquestionably Phillip Risden's widow who married Arthur Upshur I soon after Risden's death.

[25] "It is ordered by the Cort that Arthur Upshott who hath married Mary the Widdowe and Relict of Mr. Risden lately deceased shall have a Commission of Administration granted him upon the late Mr. Risden's estate provided that he put in Security to the Cort and pay the Clarke fee." Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1654-55, 133.

[26] Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers*, 330.

[27] *Ibid.*, 412.

[28] Accomack County, Va., Court Records, Deeds, Wills, and Orders, 1663-66, 76.

Jacob,[29] possibly the daughter of Dr. George Clarke of Northampton County. Mary Clarke had married, first, Mark Hamond.[30] She was Hamond's second wife and by that marriage had a son, Edward Hamond.[31] Mary Clarke had married, second, Richard Jacob who left eight children provided for in his will.[32] However, neither the will of Richard Jacob nor Arthur Upshur's bond to the Jacob children indicates that Mary was the mother of any of the Jacob children.[33] After the death of Richard Jacob in February 1662/3, Mary married Arthur Upshur.

By the will of her former husband, Richard Jacob, Mary had received dower rights to the Jacob home plantation on Broad Creek, later known as Church Creek, a branch of Nassawadox Creek. This plantation was located northeast of Bridgetown near Hungars Church, and has been known for generations as "Cedar Grove." No doubt Mary continued to live here as the Widow Jacob sharing the property with her stepson, Phillip Jacob. After Mary married Arthur Upshur it is believed that Arthur left Occohannock and went to "Cedar Grove" to live. In the years following their marriage Arthur entered into a series of land exchanges with his stepsons, Edward Hamond and

---

[29] In anticipation of his marriage to Mary (Clarke) Hamond-Jacob, and in order to fulfill the provisions of the will of Richard Jacob, Mary's former husband, Arthur Upshur I gave bond on June 15, 1663, assuring to the five youngest Jacob children payment of their inheritance. Bond to Jacob children: Priscilla, Mary, Sarah, William, and Richard, Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1657-66, 89. In this court entry Arthur is referred to as Arthur Upshott of Occohannock. For proof that this marriage was consummated see indenture recorded Sept. 16, 1674, Phillip Jacob to Arthur Upshott ". . . 550 acres bequeathed by my father Richard Jacob—part of which land forthwith to be by me possessed and the remainder after the death of his then wife Mary Jacob (now wife to Mr. Arthur Upshott) . . .," Northampton Deeds, Etc., 1668-80, 79.

[30] Marke Hamond's certificate for headrights entered in the court records, dated Sept. 13, 1641, shows Mary's name thus: "Anne Dennis his first wife, Mary Clarke his now wife . . .," Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1640-45, 56.

[31] Patent to Edward Hamond, "son and heire of Marke Hamond," dated June 10, 1654, Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers*, 233. Gift from Mary Upshur, "consent of husband, Arthur Upshur," to the children of her son, Edward Hamond, dated Nov. 10, 1674, Accomack Wills, 1673-76, 210.

[32] Will of Richard Jacob dated Jan. 30, 1662/3, proved March 2, 1662/3, Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1657-66, 83.

[33] *Ibid.*; Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1657-66, 89.

Phillip Jacob, whereby he and Mary gained full ownership of the Jacob home plantation, "Cedar Grove."

By deed dated October 18, 1664, Arthur exchanged his 700-acre plantation at Occohannock with his stepson, Edward Hamond, for 250 acres of land at the head of Broad Creek, adjacent to "Cedar Grove."[34] However, Arthur retained a small acreage of his Occohannock land for a mill. This mill site was located at Great Otterdams Branch, a short distance east of the road to Pungoteague. This small acreage remained in the Upshur Family until 1743 when Arthur's grandson, Abel Upshur I, sold to Thomas Stringer. Arthur did not receive a patent for the Broad Creek land obtained from Hamond until October 30, 1669. The patent was for 350 acres, indicating an excess of 100 acres found by resurvey to be within the bounds.[35]

On August 27, 1674, Arthur exchanged the 350 acres of Broad Creek land obtained from Edward Hamond with Phillip Jacob for "Cedar Grove."[36] This latter plantation consisting of 550 acres, identified in contemporary records as the Jacob home plantation, had been left to Phillip in 1662/3 by the will of his father, Richard Jacob, subject to dower rights of his wife, Mary,[37] subsequently the wife of Arthur Upshur I. By these exchanges Arthur relinquished his Occohannock lands and became possessed of "Cedar Grove." The oldest portion of the present house may date back to early Upshur ownership.[38]

Arthur had received a patent dated September 28, 1664, for 2000 acres of land at Matchipungo on the seaside of Accomack County.[39] Later this tract became known as Upshur's Neck; it

---

[34] Deeds of exchange between Arthur Upshur I and Edward Hamond, Accomack Deeds, Wills, and Orders, 1663-66, 76; Northampton Deeds, Etc., 1668-80, 76.

[35] Virginia Land Patents, Patent Book VI, 261.

[36] Deeds of exchange between Arthur Upshur I and Phillip Jacob, Northampton Deeds, Etc., 1668-80, 78-9.

[37] Will of Richard Jacob, Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1657-66, 83.

[38] Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 383.

[39] Nugent, *Cavaliers and Pioneers*, 507. Arthur Upshur I also received a certificate dated March 20, 1693/4, for 950 acres. He did not take out a patent for this acreage and it is

was thus recorded on several early maps and is so called today. Arthur had paid Colonel William Kendall I of Northampton County 16,000 pounds of tobacco and cask for this tract, previously granted to Colonel Kendall by the General Court of Virginia on October 18, 1660.[40] When first surveyed this tract was estimated to contain 2000 acres, but when resurveyed by Arthur Upshur II who inherited the land, it was found to contain 2300 acres and was so repatented in his name on May 2, 1713.[41]

Arthur Upshur I did not establish his residence on the Upshur's Neck tract until 1678; he preferred first to develop his latest and largest plantation. As evidenced by the list of tithables of Accomack County, Arthur had three men working there during 1666, 1669, 1671 and 1674.[42] By 1678 Upshur's Neck had become an operating plantation for in that year and in each succeeding year through 1695 there were five or more tithables listed.[43] So Arthur and Mary probably moved from "Cedar Grove" in Northampton County to Upshur's Neck in Accomack County about 1678.

Thomas Teackle Upshur II claimed that Arthur moved to Upshur's Neck prior to November 10, 1674, for on that date his wife, Mary (Clarke) Hamond-Jacob-Upshur, filed a deed of

---

assumed that he otherwise disposed of this certificate. Accomack Orders, 1690-97, 124. According to Ames, *Studies of The Virginia Eastern Shore in the Seventeenth Century,* 30-1, the average size of plantations in Accomack County in 1704 was 520 acres, and 4 per cent of the population (forty-six planters) held 43 per cent of the land.

40 "Coll Wm Kendall of Northampton Co in Va Greetings—whereas by instructions from the Kings most Excellent majesty to Sir Wm Berkeley—consent of counsell of State patent under seale of the Collony made and dated at James City 28 day of September 1664 for the Consideration therein expressed—hath given and granted unto Arthur Upshott 2000 A—situate lying and being in Matchipungo Neck—Co of Accomack . . . 1000 A of sd lands—formerly belonging to Capt Pott part of a granted dividend and by him deserted—1000 A more of sd land formerly belonging to Mr. George Marsh which 2000 A of land being part of 3500 A of land formerly taken up by the sd Capt Ffrancis Pott and by him deserted and by order of the Genll Court 18 Oct 1660 confirmed to Coll Wm Kendall and by him assigned unto Arthur Upshott . . . For consideration of sum of 16,000# of tobacco and cask . . .," Accomack Deeds and Wills, 1664-71, 26.

41 Virginia Land Patents, Patent Book X, 102.

42 Stratton Nottingham, *Accomack Tithables 1663-95* (Onancock, 1931), *passim.*

43 *Ibid.*

gift to her Hamond grandchildren in the Accomack court.[44] But this deed was filed in Accomack County probably because her Hamond grandchildren were living in that county and not because Mary was domiciled there. In fact, Mary was identified in this deed as "wife of Arthur Upshur of Hungors in Northampton County." It is certain that Arthur was a citizen of Northampton County in 1673, for on June 30 of that year he was tried and acquitted by the court of Northampton County on a charge of murdering one of his servant women.[45] Moreover, he was still a citizen of Northampton County in the year 1676 when he signed the "Northampton Grievances."[46] It can be assumed therefore that Arthur and Mary moved to Upshur's Neck about 1678.

Comparatively little is known of Arthur Upshur I as a person. When he arrived on the Eastern Shore of Virginia in 1637 he was but a youth of twelve without family or resources. The Shore at that time was sparsely settled and undeveloped so Arthur must have found life there rugged and difficult in comparison with his native England. Records indicate that he never learned to read or write, yet by his industry and business acumen he succeeded in amassing considerable real property, and by his honor and integrity established himself as a substantial citizen, assuming community responsibility. Although apparently not politically ambitious, Arthur accepted certain political duties; on June 6, 1665, at a meeting of the Northampton court he was appointed Surveyor of Highways in his precinct,[47] and in 1676 he was one of ten prominent men of Northampton County

---

[44] Accomack Wills, 1673-76, 210.

[45] This interesting trial, recorded July 7, 1673, covers several pages in the record book. Ample evidence was produced to prove that the servant died of scurvy. Northampton Order Book, 1664-74, 189, 192-6.

[46] "Causes of Discontent in Virginia, 1676: Northampton Grievances," *Virginia Magazine of History and Biography*, 2(1895), 289-92; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 34-6.

[47] Northampton Order Book, 1664-74, 5.

delegated to draw up and sign a petition known as the "Northampton Grievances."[48]

As already related, Arthur and Mary probably moved from their Broad Creek plantation, "Cedar Grove," to the Upshur's Neck plantation, "Warwick," about 1678. It was here that they lived peacefully together for many years developing their seaside plantation overlooking Upshur's Bay and, in the distance beyond, Parramore Island and the Atlantic Ocean. Here they are buried side by side, not many yards from the burying ground of several generations of their descendants. One may still decipher the inscriptions on their tombstones:

In Memory
of Arthur Upshur
born in the County of
Essex in the Kingdom
of England who
died Jany the 26th
1709 in the 85 year
of his age

In Memory
of Mary the wife of
Arthur Upshur born
in Warwickshire in
the Kingdom of England
who died July the 3d
1703 in the 85 year
of her age[49]

In his will Arthur Upshur I mentioned his children: John (I); Arthur, Jr. (II); Ann.[50] He also had a daughter, Helen, who was baptized on May 5, 1661,[51] in Hungars Parish. If Arthur had other children the records of the Eastern Shore fail to reveal them.

I. John Upshur I was probably the eldest child of Arthur Upshur I, however, he received no legacy by his father's will. This seems strange since legacies were left to other known surviving children and grandchildren. John may

---

[48] "Causes of Discontent in Virginia, 1676: Northampton Grievances," *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 2(1895), 289-92; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 34-6.

[49] *Wm. and Mary Quar.*, 1st ser., 3(1895), 256.

[50] Will of Arthur Upshur I, Accomack Wills, Etc., 1692-1715, 463. Copy of will at the end of chapter.

[51] Baptisms in Hungars Parish from March 25, 1661, to March 25, 1662, Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1657-66, 68.

have angered his father for there is little doubt that he survived him and died in 1720 in Somerset County, Maryland, in that part which later became Worcester County.[52]

John I is believed to be the son of Arthur's first and unknown wife. He must have been born prior to 1655, the year of Arthur's marriage to Mary (Hardwige?) Risden, for in 1672/3 when John I emigrated to Talbot County, Maryland,[53] he had a wife and two children. Had he been the son of Mary he could have been but sixteen years of age at that time; hence John I must have been Arthur's son by his first wife.

The records of Northampton and Accomack Counties tell little of this John Upshur; in 1696 he was a witness to the will of Alexander Massie[54] who lived in Accomack County at the head of Messongo Creek, not far from the Virginia-Maryland line, and John I is mentioned in the will of his father, Arthur Upshur I. John I lived most of his life on the Eastern Shore of Maryland and his emigration to Talbot County in 1672/3 is a matter of official record: "John Upshott of Talbot County proved rights to 200 acres of land for transporting himself, Elizabeth his wife, Elizabeth and Sarah his children, into this province to inhabit."[55] Elizabeth, his wife, was probably the sister of Robert Blades of Somerset County for in John's will Blades is mentioned as brother-in-law."[56]

John I married, second, Mary Thomas, who bore him no child of whom there is record. This marriage was evidently

---

[52] The will of John Upshott was proved on June 23, 1720, therefore, he died before that date. Worcester County, Md., Court Records, Wills, MH No. 3, 1666-1743, 182-3.

[53] Maryland Land Office Records, Patent Liber XVII, 389.

[54] Will of Alexander Massie, Accomack Wills, Etc., 1692-1715, 233.

[55] Maryland Land Office Records, Patent Liber XVII, 389. John assigned the 200 acres to Raymond Stapleford of Dorchester County, Md., by certificate dated Feb. 20, 1672/3.

[56] Will of John Upshott, Worcester Wills, MH No. 3, 1666-1743, 182-3. There is a deed dated Feb. 5, 1677/8, from Thomas Davis of Whorekill, tailor, to Robert Blades and John Upshott for land situated on the south side of the Pocomoke River. Somerset County, Md., Land Records, WW, 1676-79, 281-4.

an elopement for John Thomas, the father of Mary, caused John's arrest and had him bound over to keep the peace in the sum of fifty pounds.[57] The entry relating to this marriage appears in the Somerset County records: "These presents may certify to all persons whom it concerns that John Upshott and Mary Thomas were joyned together in Matrimony according to the form of the Church of England and the Customs of Virginia, this 19th day of July, 1695, by me Tho. Teackle:"[58]

John Upshur I died in 1720 in Worcester County, Maryland. His will[59] dated October 31, 1702, probated June 23, 1720, mentions his wife, Mary, and his daughter, Elizabeth Tudor; there is no mention of his daughter, Sarah, who probably died before the will was written. As far as can be determined John I left no issue who lived to have descendants, hence no further reference to him is considered necessary.

II. Arthur Upshur II, called Arthur, Jr. in his father's will, was the second son of Arthur Upshur I. Arthur II married twice and had male issue who lived to perpetuate the Upshur name. It is to Arthur Upshur II and his descendants that the succeeding chapters of this genealogy will be devoted.

III. Ann Upshur. It is not known when Arthur's daughter, Ann, was born. In 1699 when her first husband, Jonathan Stott,[60] died Ann was the mother of at least five living Stott

---

[57] Somerset Judgments, E No. 26, 1695-96, 5.

[58] *Ibid.*

[59] Will of John Upshott, Worcester Wills, MH No. 3, 1666-1743, 182-3.

[60] At a meeting of the Northampton court held on July 28, 1699, Ann (Upshur) Stott applied for a commission of administration upon the estate of her late husband, Jonathan Stott. The application was granted and Arthur Upshur I and Thomas Dolby acted as security. Northampton Orders, Wills, Etc., 1698-1710, 115. Inventory of estate of Jonathan Stott, recorded Aug. 10, 1699, names his widow, Ann, administratrix. Northampton Deeds and Wills, 1692-1707, 234-6.

children.[61] After the death of Stott and before the year 1707/8 Ann married Benjamin Dolby.[62] Dolby died early in 1736, and since there was no mention of his wife or children in his will,[63] it is assumed that Ann had died prior to the death of her second husband and that there were no surviving children of this marriage. However, Dolby mentioned the wife and children of Ann's son, Jonathan Stott, Jr.

IV. Helen Upshur, youngest child of Arthur Upshur I, was born in 1661[64] but no further record of her by name has been found. A court record of 1673[65] refers to Arthur Upshur's "child," not designated by name, but it cannot be assumed that the child was Helen. It is possible that Helen lived to become the wife of a William Brown of the Eastern Shore who on April 16, 1683, "then received of my father Upshot twenty head of old cattle one yearling and six calfs for use of my wife belonging to her Estate marked twenty one with my wifes proper mark a swallow taile on the right eare and the other two marked croped on both ears and a slitt on the left . . . Wm Brown."[66] But if Brown had married Helen Upshur she hardly would have had an estate of cattle of her own unless she had previously married. In any case Helen must have died without issue before 1707/8 for neither she nor her children were mentioned in her father's will.

Will of Arthur Upshur I[67]

In the name of God Amen this twelfe day of February anno Dom: 1707 accord-

---

[61] Five Stott grandchildren were mentioned in the will of Arthur Upshur I dated 1707/8. Accomack Wills, Etc., 1692-1715, 463.

[62] *Ibid.* In his will Arthur Upshur I mentioned his dau., Ann, "the now wife of Benjamin Dolby." Benjamin was the son of John Dolby (wife Margery) of Northampton County.

[63] Will of Benjamin Dolby, Northampton Wills and Inventories, 1733-40, 151.

[64] Baptisms in Hungars Parish from March 25, 1661, to March 25, 1662, Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1657-66, 68.

[65] Northampton Order Book, 1664-74, 196.

[66] Accomack Wills and Deeds, 1676-90, 331.

[67] Will of Arthur Upshur I, Accomack Wills, Etc., 1692-1715, 463.

ing to the Computation of the Church of England I Arther Upshur of Accomack County in Virginia Gent being sick and weake in body but of good and disposeing Memory and Judgement praised be Almighty God for the same and being desireous to settle things in order and to dispose of that worldly Estat where with God Almighty far above my deserts hath blessed me with all do make ordaine Constitute and appoint this my Last will and Testament to be in manner and and forme following

Imprimis I bequeath my soule unto the merciful hands of Almighty God that gave it and my body to the Earth from whence it Came to receve such decent and Christian Buriall as by my Executor herein hereafter named shall think most fitting and Convenient in sure and Certaine hope of a Joyfull resurrection unto Eternall life in and through the merits mediation Death and passion of my Blessed Lord and Savior Jesus Christ

Item I give and bequeath my well beloved sonn Arther Upshure Junr: My plantation: where I now dwell with all the Land thereto appertaineing Containing two thousand Acres one thousand acres being formerly by me given to my sd son John Upshur by a Certain deed of Guift which said Land and Plantation I doe hereby give devise and Confirme to my sd son Arther and to his heirs for Ever

Item I give and bequeath unto my Daughter Ann the now wife of Benjamen Dolbey three hundred acres of Land where she now dwells at Nasawadox and binding upon the Land of Thomas Preeson which said three hundred acres of Land and plantation with the appertinences I doe hereby give and devise unto my said Daughter Ann dureing her naturall Life and after her decease to her said husband the sd Benjamen Dolbey dureing his naturell life and after his decease to my grandson Abell Upshur and to the heires of his body Lawfully begotten and for want of such heires then to go and devolve unto my grand Daughter Susanna Upshur and to the heiress of her body Lawfully begotten and for defect of such heires then to my heires at Common Law

Item I give and bequeath unto my said Grandson Able Upshur two hundred and fifty acres of Land situate Lying and being at Nusswadox and adjoining upon the aforesd three hundred acres of Land before mentioned to him the sd Abel Upshur and to the heires of his body Lawfully begotten and for want of such heires then to goe and devolve unto my sd grand Daughter Susanna Upshur and to the heires of her body Lawfully begotten and for defect of such heires then to my heires at Comon Law. And my will and desire is that my Daughter Ann the now wife of the said Benjamen Dolbey and her husband or the survivor of them shall have the use and benefit of the aforesd two hundred and fifty acres of Land untill my said grandson the said Abel Upshur arives unto the age of

nineteen yeares and no longer always provided that the sd Benjamen or wife shall not sell or dispose of to their or either of their use or uses any Timber off the sd dividend of Land but what shall be for the necessary use of the sd plantation nor to seat or suffer to be seated any tennant upon the same Land

Item All the Residue and Remainder of my Lands whatsoever that I dye seised and possessed of I give unto my said sonn the sd Arther Upshur Junr and to his heires for Ever

Item I give and bequeath unto my sd Daughter Ann Dolbey two steers one of five years and the other of six years old and foure Cowes either with Calfe or Calves by theire sides one two yeare old steer and a two yeare old heffer always provided that the persons Concerned shall be oblidged to fetch the aforesd Cattle so given as aforesd off my sd plantacon within three munths after my decease

Item I give and bequeath unto my sd Daughter Ann Dolbey one good feather bed and boulster a pare of sheet and a Rugg

Item I give and bequeath unto my five grand children vizt Amy Stott Lidia Stott Margaret Stott Bridget Stott and Jonathan Stott to Each of them ten shillins

Item I give and bequeath unto my daughter in Law Sarah Upshur my own Rideing hors

Item I give and bequeath unto my grand son Arther Upshur my silver beaker and that Chest I Commonly Called my own Chest

Item I give and bequeath unto my grand daughter Susanna Upshur one Red Cow with a white starr in the forehead marked with my owne proper mark and one two yeare old heffer one yeare old heffer and a Calfe with all theire Increas the said Cattle being marked with a Cropp in the right eare and a slit in the same[68]

Item I give and bequeath unto my grand daughter Sarah Upshur my silver wine cup

Item I give and bequeath unto my grand son Abel Upshur six silver spoones

Item I give and bequeath unto my Grand Daughter Abigal Upshur thirty shillins to buy her a piece of plate

Item All the Residue and remainder my Estate both reall and personall my

---

[68] The cattle marks belonging to the inhabitants of Northampton County beginning with the year 1665 are listed in Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1651-54, at the end of the volume. Arthur Upshur's mark is recorded on page 9 of this supplement as follows: "Feb 28, 1667 Arthur Upshott's marke—slitt on both ears and under bitted on the left being formerly Richard Jacob's marke, his own and sd marke is cropt on both ears and three slits on the left ear. His burnt marke A-V."

debts paid and funarale expences discharged I give and bequeath unto my well and beloved sonn Arther Upshur Junr afore named and I doe hereby Constitute and appoint my sd sonn Arther sole Executor of this my last will and Testament Revoking and disannuling all other wills or Testaments whatsoever by me formerly made and do publish and declare this to be my Last will and Testament in witness here of I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and yeare first above mentioned

signum
Arther X Upshur seale

Proved February 1, 1708/9.

Chapter III

ARTHUR UPSHUR II

(*ca.* 1654-1738)

ARTHUR UPSHUR II, believed to be the second son of Arthur Upshur I, was born about 1654 on his father's plantation at the head of Occohannock Creek. He was probably the son of Arthur I by his first wife whose identity has not been determined, although it is possible that he was the son of Mary (Hardwige?) Risden whom Arthur I married in 1655. However, had Arthur II been the son of Mary, he could have been but eighteen years old when his twin children were born in 1674,[69] hence it seems more reasonable to believe that he, like his brother, John I, was the son of Arthur Upshur I by his first wife.

When Arthur II was about nine years old Mary (Hardwige?) Risden-Upshur died and in 1663 his father married Mary (Clarke) Hamond-Jacob. The family then moved from the Occohannock plantation to "Cedar Grove." How long Arthur II lived with his new stepmother at "Cedar Grove" is not known but it is suspected that he soon left Virginia for Maryland, perhaps to join his brother, John I, for the names of both Arthur and John Upshur appear in the Maryland records confirming their presence in that province. They were part of a general migration of Accomack and Northampton County residents who, in the years following 1660, emigrated up the peninsula

---

[69] Birth of twin children of Arthur Upshur II is recorded in Somerset Land Records, IKL, 1714-15, 263.

to Maryland and settled in those areas adjacent to the Virginia line.[70]

Arthur II maried, first, Elizabeth whose maiden name has not been determined. It is believed that this marriage took place in Somerset County, Maryland, and that Elizabeth was a native of that province. In 1674 Arthur II and Elizabeth were living on Marumsco Creek[71] where on November 21 of that year Elizabeth bore him twins, John and Sarah.[72] Sarah died January 21, 1675/6,[73] and no further record has been found concerning her twin brother, John. If Arthur II and Elizabeth Upshur had other children, no record has been found to prove it nor is it known when Elizabeth died.

It is uncertain when Arthur II left Maryland to return to Virginia but it was probably prior to February 20, 1687/8, for on that date his father gave him a deed to 1000 acres of the Upshur's Neck land ". . . to begin at the Southermost point or bottome of the neck and then to Extend upward from thence and to comprehend all the Land betweene the Seaside and Matchipungo River untill the said one thousand acres be fully Compleated . . ."[74]

About 1690 Arthur II married, second, Sarah Browne.[75] She

---

[70] Clayton Torrence, *Old Somerset on the Eastern Shore of Maryland* (Richmond, 1935), 5-22.

[71] Marumsco is a small creek which flows southerly into the Pocomoke River near its mouth.

[72] Lists of births etc., Somerset Land Records, IKL, 1714-15, 263.

[73] *Ibid.*

[74] Deed of gift, Arthur Upshur I to Arthur Upshur II, Accomack Wills and Deeds, 1676-90, 464-5.

[75] Descent of Sarah Brown: John Browne (d. 1655/6), E. S. Va. immigrant, m. Ursula (?), had Thomas Browne (d. 1705) m. Susanna Denwood (d. *ca.* 1714, had Sarah Browne m. Arthur Upshur II. Will of John Browne, Northampton Orders, Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1654-55, 86. Will of Thomas Browne, Northampton Orders, Wills, Etc., 1698-1710, 240. For Browne lineage, Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; Christopher Johnston, ed., *Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Maryland* (Baltimore, 1905), plate I, 21; Rev. Chester Mansfield Smith, "Smith, Teackle, Upshur Families," Md. Hist. Soc. Library, Baltimore, Md. Susanna (Denwood) Browne, mother of Sarah (Browne) Upshur, was dau. of Liveing Denwood (b. *ca.* 1602), E. S. Va. immigrant, and Mary (Cutting?) Denwood, probably sister of Jane Cutting who married Elias Hartree. For will of Jane (Cutting?) Hartree in which the names of Mary Denwood, Sr., and her dau. Susanna (Denwood) Browne appear, Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1657-66, 123. Will of Susanna (Denwood) Browne, Northampton Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1718-25, 16. For Den-

was the daughter of Thomas and Susanna (Denwood) Browne, Quakers, who owned a plantation, later known as "Brownsville,"[76] across the Matchipungo River, a short distance to the southwest of Upshur's Neck. The fact that Arthur II courted and married a young woman whose home was quite near the 1000-acre tract given to him by his father in 1687/8 would seem to indicate that Arthur II was already living on his Upshur's Neck property at the time of his marriage. Although existing records do not reveal where Arthur II and Sarah lived in the years immediately following their marriage, it is reasonable to believe that he took Sarah to Upshur's Neck as a bride and that their older children were born there.

It has been suggested that Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur may have made their first home at "Cedar Grove," or on Occohannock Creek where Authur I had reserved a small part of his original tract, or at "Brownsville," part of which Sarah was to inherit in 1705 by the will of her father, Thomas Browne.[77] However, it seems more reasonable to assume that they established their home on the lower end of Upshur's Neck, on that part since known as "Point Farm" or "Essex" after the Upshurs' ancestral shire in England.[78]

Arthur II inherited "Warwick" upon the death of his father in 1708/9 and undoubtedly lived there after that date for the home plantation was a more developed seat than "Essex" and was closer to neighbors and settlements. Arthur II may have moved his family up the Neck from "Essex" to "Warwick" even before

---

wood lineage, Torrence, *Old Somerset on the Eastern Shore of Maryland*, 98-106, 443; Smith, "Smith, Teackle, Upshur Families."

[76] Description of "Brownsville," Appendix, Note XII.

[77] The will of Thomas Browne provided that his seaside plantation containing 1262 acres be divided between his daus., Sarah and Anne. Sarah inherited the northern half and Anne the lower half. Northampton Orders, Wills, Etc., 1698-1710, 240. Anne married, first, Joseph Preeson, second, Andrew Hamilton. Both men were inhabitants of Northampton County. Andrew Hamilton was one of the most eminent lawyers of the colonial period. About 1716 Andrew and Anne moved to Philadelphia where their son, James, later became Mayor and Acting Governor of Pennsylvania. *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 20(1912), 118-19; Dumas Malone, ed., *Dictionary of American Biography* (New York, 1932), VIII, 182, 186.

[78] Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 587.

the death of his father, for his stepmother, Mary (Clarke) Hamond-Jacob-Upshur, had died in 1703, leaving Arthur I a lonely old man of about eighty. It seems logical to conclude that the move took place shortly after 1703 and that Arthur II combined his household with that of his father who was dependent upon the attentions which his son and family could offer.

Like his father, Arthur Upshur II was a planter. The county records of both Northampton and Accomack show that he was a prominent inhabitant of the Eastern Shore and that he was a man of wealth and influence. He was a large land owner and possessed many slaves and cattle. In early colonial days when only a small percent of the population could read and write Arthur II most certainly was considered a man of education. This is evidenced by the chirography of his signature on a deed of gift dated June 11, 1734,[79] confirming "Brownsville" to his son, Thomas Upshur I. The original copy of this deed is still preserved in the family.[80]

The will of Arthur Upshur II was dated May 26, 1738, and proved July 4, 1738,[81] so he died between those dates. He was an old man when he died, having attained approximately the same age as his father who lived to be eighty-five. Arthur II was survived by his wife, Sarah, as shown by his will, but it is not known when she died. Although the graves of this couple have not been found it is believed that they were buried at "Warwick." Thomas Teackle Upshur II expressed the belief that they were buried to the north of the present house, apart from the other burying ground, and that their graves were marked only by cobblestones. Sarah was the daughter of Quaker parents and tombstones were held in disfavor by that sect.

The known children of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur

---

[79] Deed of gift to Thomas Upshur I for "Brownsville," Northampton Deeds, 1733-50, 30.

[80] Framed and hanging on the wall at "Brownsville."

[81] Will of Arthur Upshur II, Accomack Wills, 1737-43, 69. Copy of will at the end of chapter.

were: Arthur III; Abel I; Thomas I; Susanna; Sarah; Abigail; Elizabeth; Anne. Of these only Abel, Thomas, Abigail, and Elizabeth were mentioned in the will of Arthur II, thus it may be assumed that the other children had died before he wrote his will in 1738.

I. Arthur Upshur III was the eldest son of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur. He was born before 1707/8 for he received a legacy by the will of his grandfather, Arthur Upshur I. Since he was not mentioned in his father's will it is believed that he died before 1738. By a deed of gift dated November 1, 1720,[82] his father gave him one half of a tract of land on Occohannock Creek adjoining the land of Thomas Stringer. No other records concerning Arthur III have been found; if he married and had children, no record of them has been discovered.

II. Abel Upshur I was the second son of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur. A record of Abel I and his descendants will be found in the chapters immediately following.

III. Thomas Upshur I was the youngest son of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur. A record of Thomas I and his descendants will be found in the Brownsville branch of this genealogy.

IV. Susanna Upshur was the eldest daughter of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur. She was born about 1693 and married, November 2, 1710, Major John Teackle[83]

---

[82] Deed of gift, Arthur Upshur II to Arthur Upshur III, Accomack Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1715-29, 287.

[83] Maj. John Teackle (1693-1721), son of Rev. Thomas Teackle (1624-1695/6), E. S. Va. immigrant, and Margaret (Nelson) Teackle, his second wife, dau. of Robert Nelson of "Gray's Inn," London, and Mary (Temple) Nelson, dau. of Sir John Temple and Dorothy (Lee) Temple, dau. and coheir of Edmund Lee. For Teackle lineage, George A. Hanson, *Old Kent: The Eastern Shore of Maryland* (Baltimore, 1876), 311-13; Johnston, *Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Maryland*, plate II, 22; *Ibid.*, 26; *Va. Mag of Hist.*, 21(1913), 321-2, 431-2; *Ibid.*, 22(1914), 84-5; Whitelaw, *Virginia's*

of, "Craddock," Accomack County, born September 2 1693, died intestate December 3, 1721, at Yorktown, Virginia, on his return from the Virginia Assembly. John and Susanna (Upshur) Teackle had issue:

A. Thomas Teackle II, born November 11, 1711, died July 20, 1769, married, 1732, Elizabeth Custis, born 1718, daughter of Thomas Custis of "Deep Creek," Accomack County, born about 1685, died 1721, and Anne (Kendall) Custis, his second wife, and had issue.

B. John Teackle, born August 5, 1713, died May 3, 1760, without issue.

C. Caleb Teackle, born December 13, 1714, died November 1739, at St. Croix, West Indies, without issue.

D. Levin Teackle, born March 12, 1718/19, died September 28, 1794, married, first, June 4, 1752, Joice Gore Justice, born February 15, 1735/6, died December 1, 1760, and had issue. Levin married, second, April 21, 1765, Anne Arbuckle, born 1738, died November 10, 1794, and had issue.

E. Upshur Teackle, born February 26, 1719/20, died May 1774, married Margaret (Custis) Scarburgh and had issue.

F. Margaret Teackle, born March 14, 1720/1, died October 8, 1794, married, November 9, 1738, Colonel Edward Robins,[84] born April 10, 1717, died 1779, and had issue.

Eastern Shore, passim; Thomas Teackle Upshur II, MSS; Smith, "Smith, Teackle, Upshur Families." For Temple lineage, Sir Bernard Burke, *Genealogical and Heraldic Dictionary of the Peerage and Baronetage together with memoirs of the Privy Councillors and Knights* (London, 1897), 1412-14.

[84] Descent of Col. Edward Robins: Col. Obedience Robins (1600-62) of "Salt Grove," Northampton County, E. S. Va. immigrant, m. Grace (O'Neil) Waters, widow of Lt. Edward Waters (1584-1628), had Col. John Robins (1636-1709) m. Esther, dau. of Col. Nathaniel Littleton, E. S. Va. immigrant, and Ann (Southy) Harmar-Littleton, dau. of Henry Southy, E. S. Va. immigrant, had John Robins (1679-1739) m. Catherine, dau. of Rev. Thomas Teackle (1624-1695/6), E. S. Va. immigrant, and Margaret (Nelson)

Susanna (Upshur) Teackle married, second, Colonel Edmund Scarburgh IV,[85] born about 1692, died 1753. Susanna probably died before her father wrote his will in 1738 for he did not mention her name, yet left legacies to all her children. Colonel Edmund IV and Susanna (Upshur) Teackle-Scarburgh had issue:

G. Priscillah Scarburgh.[86]

V. Sarah Upshur was the second daughter of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur. She was mentioned in the will of her grandfather, Arthur Upshur I, and was born, therefore, before 1707/8. No further record concerning Sarah has been found and it is not known whether she married and left issue. She was not mentioned in her father's will so she probably died before 1738.

VI. Abigail Upshur was the third daughter of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur. She was mentioned in the will of her grandfather, Arthur Upshur I, and was born, therefore, before 1707/8. Abigail married, first, William Waters[87] of "Waters' River," Somerset County, Maryland, and had issue:

Teackle, had Col. Edward Robins (1717-79) m. Margaret Teackle (1720/1-94). For Robins lineage, Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim.* For Littleton lineage, "The Littleton Family of Virginia," *N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, 41(1887), 364-8; *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 18(1910), 20-3; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim.*

[85] Descent of Col. Edmund Scarburgh IV: Capt. Edmund Scarburgh I (*ca.* 1584-*ca.* 1635), E. S. Va. immigrant, m. Hannah Butler, had Col. Edmund Scarburgh II (1617-71), also E. S. Va. immigrant, m. Mary (Pott? Littleton? Charlton?), had Col. Edmund Scarburgh III (d. 1712), had Col. Edmund Scarburgh IV (*ca.* 1692-1753) m. Susanna (Upshur) Teackle. For Scarburgh lineage, Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; "Scarborough Family," *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 4(1897), 316-18; *Ibid.*, 34(1926), 374; William Welsh Harrison, *Harrison, Waples and Allied Families* (Phila., 1910, privately printed), 117-22.

[86] Priscillah Scarburgh was mentioned in the will of her grandfather, Arthur Upshur II. Priscillah's father, Edmund Scarburgh IV, mentioned her name in a deed for slaves dated June 5, 1749. Accomack Deeds, 1746-57, 456.

[87] Descent of William Waters: Lt. Edward Waters (1584-1628) m. Grace O'Neil (1602-*ca.* 1682) in Bermuda; later, both immigrated to Elizabeth City County, Va., had Lt.-Col. William Waters I (*ca* 1620-89) of Northampton County, had Richard Waters (d. 1720) of Somerset County, Md., m. Elizabeth Littleton (d. 1753), dau. of Col. Southy Littleton (1645-79), had William Waters (d. 1732/3) m. Abigail Upshur (d. 1764).

A. Richard Waters.

B. Elizabeth Waters.

C. Sarah Waters.

D. William Waters.

William Waters died in 1732/3, and Abigail married, second, November 6, 1743, David Wilson of Somerset County and had issue:

E. Dr. James Wilson, born October 9, 1744, died May 5, 1796.

The will of Abigail (Upshur) Waters-Wilson[88] was dated August 1, 1764, and proved October 23, 1764, so she died between those dates.

VII. Elizabeth Upshur was one of the younger daughters of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur. She was not mentioned in the will of her grandfather, Arthur Upshur I, and probably was born after 1707/8. She married Andrew Finney[89] of Accomack County who died in 1742. Elizabeth survived her husband. Issue:

A. Abel Finney.

B. Andrew Finney.

C. Sarah Finney.

D. Arthur Finney.

Will of William Waters dated Jan. 9, 1732/3, Somerset Wills, EB No. 9, 1709-48, 151. Will of Richard Waters, *Ibid.*, 35. For Waters lineage, *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 9(1901), 210-11, 428-9; Lyon Gardiner Tyler, ed., *Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography* (New York, 1915), I, 353-4; Torrence, *Old Somerset on the Eastern Shore of Maryland, passim*; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 147. Col. Southy Littleton (1645-79), supra, of "Nandua," Accomack County, was son of Col. Nathaniel Littleton who immigrated to E. S. Va. about 1635. Col. Southy Littleton married Sarah, dau. of Maj. Edmund Bowman (d. 1692) of "Bowman's Folly," Accomack County, E. S. Va. immigrant. See 84*n*.

[88] Will of Abigail (Upshur) Waters-Wilson, Somerset Wills, EB No. 4, 1750-72, 109.

[89] Andrew Finney (d. 1742), son of William Finney (d. 1738), son of Andrew Finney (d. 1669), all of E. S. Va. Will of Andrew Finney (d. 1742), Accomack Wills, 1737-43, 394; will of William Finney (d. 1738), *Ibid.*, 104.

E. Betty Finney.

F. William Finney.

VIII. Anne Upshur was perhaps the youngest daughter of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur. She was not mentioned in the will of her grandfather, Arthur Upshur I, and probably was born after 1707/8. Anne married Major John Custis[90] of "Deep Creek," Accomack County, and had issue:

A. Hancock Custis.

B. Susanna Custis, born 1728, died May 18, 1785, married January 2, 1752, John Smith, born December 6, 1722, died March 23, 1779, and had issue.

Major Custis died in January 1732/3, and it appears from his will that Anne (Upshur) Custis was his last wife. He mentioned his wife, Anne, and four children: Thomas; Betty; Hancock; Susanna. Abel Upshur I, brother of Anne, was named executor of the will. The fact that Hancock and Susanna Custis received legacies from Arthur Upshur II indicates that these two were children of Anne, whereas the absence of any reference to Thomas and Betty indicates that these two were not Anne's children. Major Custis left his plantation at "Deep Creek"

---

[90] Descent of Maj. John Custis: John Custis I (b. *ca.* 1599), Englishman, born perhaps in Gloucester, Eng., but later a resident of Rotterdam, Holland, m. Joane Powell, had Thomas Custis (b. *ca.* 1628) of Baltimore, Ireland, brother of Maj.-Gen. John Custis II (*ca.* 1630-1695/6) of "Arlington," Northampton County, E. S. Va. immigrant, had Edmund Custis (*ca.* 1650-1701) of "Deep Creek," Accomack County, E. S. Va. immigrant, m. Tabitha Scarburgh Whittington, had Thomas Custis (*ca.* 1685-1721) of "Deep Creek" m. 1st, Elizabeth Custis, his second cousin, dau. of Col. John Custis III (1653-1713/14) of "Wilsonia," Northampton County, and Margaret (Michael) Custis, his first wife. Thomas and Elizabeth (Custis) Custis had Maj. John Custis (*ca.* 1701-1732/3) of "Deep Creek" m. 1st, Susanna (Bowdoin?), 2d, Anne Upshur. See deed of Gift to "Deep Creek," Maj.-Gen. John Custis II to his nephew, Edmund Custis (*ca.* 1650-1701), Northampton Deeds, Etc., 1668-80, 273. Will of Edmund Custis of "Deep Creek," Accomack Wills, Etc., 1692-1715, 262. Will of Thomas Custis of "Deep Creek," Accomack Deeds, Wills, Etc., 1715-29, 327. Will of Maj. John Custis of "Deep Creek," Accomack Deeds and Wills, 1729-37, 260. For Custis lineage, Harrison, *Harrison, Waples and Allied Families*, 88-108; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim.*

to Thomas, his eldest son, and to Betty ". . . All her Mother's wearing Cloathes . . ." This, too, would indicate that Betty was a child of a former wife. Anne (Upshur) Custis married, second, 1734, Colonel Custis Kendall[91] of Northampton County. Anne probably died before her father wrote his will in 1738 for her name was not mentioned although legacies were left to her three children. Colonel Kendall survived Anne and died in 1781. Issue:

C. William Kendall, died 1795, was mentioned in the will of his grandfather, Arthur Upshur II.

Will of Arthur Upshur II[92]

In the name of God Amen I Arthur Upshur of the county of Accomack, Gent being weak in body but of sound mind and memory thanks be to Almighty God for it I do therefore make and ordain this my Last Will and Testament in manner following First I Give and bequeath my Sole into the hands of Almighty God who gave it trusting that in and by the Merits of my Blessed Savior Jesus Christ I shall have Eternall salvation and for such worly Goods as the Goodness of God hath bestowed on me I Doe dispose of it in manner following

Imprs I give and bequeath unto my loving wife Sarah Upshur Two negroes wenches named Mary and Rose One Silver Tankard One Doz: Silver spoons A loe Chest of Draws and a large wooden Trunk two Beds and Two Silk Ruggs with other furniture Sutable twenty head of Cattle of Difrent Sizes Twenty head of Sheep One Large Copper Kittle that Came from Northampton twenty pounds of pewter One Large Chist One hundred weight of pott Iron One Linning wheel One half Doz. Black flagt Chears

Item I give and bequeath unto my Daughter Rachel Upshur One Chest of Draws made of Cherity

---

[91] Descent of Col. Custis Kendall: Col. William Kendall I (d. 1686) emigrated from England to E. S. Va. about 1640, m. 2d, Susanna (Baker) Eyre-Pott, had Capt. William Kendall II (1659-96) m. Ann Mason, had William Kendall III (*ca.* 1687-1720) m. Sorrowful Margaret Custis, dau. of Col. John Custis III of "Wilsonia," had Col. Custis Kendall (d. 1781) m. Anne (Upshur) Custis. The text of a deed dated Nov. 19, 1734, Custis Kendall to Peter Bowdoin, proves that Kendall married Anne (Upshur) Custis, widow of Maj. John Custis of "Deep Creek." Accomack Deeds and Wills, 1729-37, 435. For Kendall lineage, Norman Festus Kendall, *History and Genealogy of Kendalls, Cunninghams, Snodgrasses* (Grafton, W. Va., 1942); Anne Kendrick Walker, *The Storied Kendalls* (Richmond, 1947); Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim.* See 90*n.*

[92] Will of Arthur Upshur II, Accomack Wills, 1737-43, 69.

Item I give and bequeath unto my Son Thomas Upshur two young Negroes named Tony and Comfort and Twenty Pounds Curant money

Item I give and bequeath unto my Daughter Abigall Waters two negroes Lucy and Briget and Ten pounds Cash

Item I give and bequeath unto my Daughter Elizabeth Finney fifty Pounds Curant money One Silk Rugg

Item I give and bequeath unto my Granson Arthur Upshur One new Gun and a black wolnot Desk

Item I give and bequeath unto my Granson Hancock ten Head of young Cattle and ten head Sheep the same to be Delivered to him when he shall Arrive at the Age of twenty One years

Item I give and bequeath unto my Granson William Kendall Twenty Shillings

Item I give and bequeath unto my Grandaughter Susanah Custis One pott of five Gallons One frying pan two pewter basones two Pewter Dishes and half Doz.: Plates and Twenty Shillings Cash

Item I give and bequeath unto my Granson Thomas Teakle twenty Shillings

Item I give and bequeath unto my Grandaughter Margaret Teakle twenty Shillings

Item I give and bequeath unto my Grandaughter Prosilloh Scarburg Twenty Shillings Cash

Item I give and bequeath unto my Granson John Teakle five pounds Cash

Item I give and bequeath unto my Granson Caleb Teakle five pounds Cash

Item I give and bequeath unto my Granson Leven Teakle Twenty Pounds Cash

Item I give and bequeath unto my Granson Upshur Teakle five Pounds Cash

Item I give and bequeath unto my Son Abel Upshur all the Remaining part of my Estate not by me already given both Reall and personal both in Virginia and Else where to him and his heirs for Ever. Lastly I Doe here nominate Constitute and Appoint my Son Abel Upshur to be my sole Executor of this my Last will and Testament as Witteness my hand and Seale this 26th day of May in the year of our Lord 1738.

Arthur Upshur Seal

Proved July 4, 1738.

Chapter IV

ABEL UPSHUR I

(1702-53)

ABEL UPSHUR I, son of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur, was born in 1702, perhaps at "Essex" on the lower end of Upshur's Neck. As a son of prominent and wealthy parents it is not surprising that he became one of the leading citizens of his time on the Eastern Shore. Although he held no important political positions, the Accomack court appointed him guardian to various minor children and he was frequently arbitrator in civil suits. The title, "Gentleman," was appended to his name as well as to the names of all his sons, a custom which was subsequently discontinued on the Shore.

Abel I became possessed of considerable wealth and property. He inherited "Cedar Grove" from his grandfather, Arthur Upshur I, and as eldest surviving son of his parents inherited the home plantation, "Warwick," and all other lands except "Brownsville" which had been previously deeded to his younger brother, Thomas I.[93]

About 1725 Abel I married "the beautiful Rachel Revell," born 1702, daughter of John Revell[94] and Agnes (Burton) Revell,[95]

---

[93] For deed dated June 11, 1734, to Thomas Upshur I for "Brownsville," Northampton Deeds, 1733-50, 30.

[94] Descent of John Revell: Randall Revell (*ca.* 1614-1686/7), E. S. Va. immigrant, had Edward Revell (*ca.* 1635-1687/8), had John Revell (d. 1727) m. Agnes Burton. For will of John Revell dated Aug. 31, 1726, in which he leaves a legacy to his dau., Rachel, "now wife of Abell Upshur, Gent," Accomack Deeds, Wills, Etc.. 1715-29, 137. Will of Edward Revell dated Oct. 6, 1686, Accomack Wills and Deeds, 1676-90, 461. Will of Randall Revell, *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 23(1915), 84. For Revell lineage, Torrence, *Old Somerset on the Eastern Shore of Maryland*, 306-10, 455-7, 546-7; Johnston, *Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Maryland*, plate I, 21.

[95] Agnes (Burton) Revell was dau. of Capt. William Burton (d. 1695/6) of Accomack

a voyage to the West Indies for his health. The vessel was lost at sea with all on board.

C. Elizabeth Dennis, born May 19, 1760, died October 26, 1811, married, February 3, 1776, John Teackle[99] of "Kegotank," Accomack County, born July 3, 1753, died September 8, 1817, and had issue.

D. Littleton Dennis, born March 27, 1763, died September 23, 1764.

E. Littleton Dennis, born July 21, 1765, died August 16, 1833, married, December 4, 1788, Elizabeth Upshur, born May 1769, died May 11, 1819, daughter of John Upshur II and Ann (Emmerson) Upshur, his first wife, and had issue.

F. Sarah Dennis, born October 7, 1768, died August 5, 1804, married, November 10, 1785, Francis Hutchins Waters, born June 15, 1764, died June 9, 1826, and had issue.

G. The Honorable John Dennis of "Beckford," Princess Anne, Maryland, born December 17, 1771, died August 17, 1807, married, August 8, 1793, Elinor Jackson, died July 15, 1827, daughter of Henry Jackson of Somerset County, Maryland, and had issue among whom was Elizabeth W. Dennis who married Abel Parker Upshur I.[100]

V. Elizabeth Upshur was the youngest daughter of Abel I and Rachel (Revell) Upshur. She was born about 1740 and married, about 1757, Colonel Thomas Teackle III of

---

[99] Descent of John Teackle of "Kegotank": Rev. Thomas Teackle (1624-1695/6), E. S. Va. immigrant, m. Margaret Nelson, had Maj. John Teackle (1693-1721) of "Craddock," Accomack County, m. Susanna Upshur (b. *ca.* 1693), had Levin Teackle (1718/19-94) m. 1st, Joice Gore Justice (1735/6-60), dau. of Ralph Justice (d. *ca.* 1760), had John Teackle (1753-1817) of "Kegotank" m. Elizabeth Dennis (1760-1811). See 83*n* and related text.

[100] Appendix, Note VIII.

"Craddock,"[101] born about 1734. Elizabeth died January 14, 1782, and Thomas III died August 15, 1784. Both were buried at "Craddock." Issue: 1417531

A. Sarah Teackle, born August 14, 1759, died December 10, 1785, married Dr. John Boisnard and had issue.

B. Colonel John Teackle II of "Craddock," born January 12, 1762, died February 18, 1811, married, December 18, 1783, Anne Stockley Upshur, born about 1765, daughter of Thomas Upshur II of "Brownsville" and Anne (Stockley) Upshur, and had issue.

C. Thomas Teackle IV, born October 30, 1763, married Catherine Stockley and had issue.

D. Susanna Teackle, born March 18, 1766, married her cousin, John Robins[102] of "Salt Grove," Northampton County, born November 5, 1740, and had issue.

E. Catherine Teackle, born August 17, 1768, married, 1786, Charles Smith[103] of "Moratico Hall," Richmond County, Virginia, and had issue.

F. George Teackle, born April 30, 1770, married Frances Bowdoin, daughter of John and Grace (Stringer) Bowdoin of Northampton County. No issue.

G. Elizabeth Upshur Teackle, born March 17, 1776, died

---

[101] Thomas Teackle III was son of Thomas Teackle II (1711-69) and Elizabeth (Custis) Teackle (b. 1718), dau. of Thomas Custis (*ca.* 1685-1721) of "Deep Creek" and Anne (Kendall) Custis, his second wife. See 90*n*. Thomas Teackle II, supra, was son of Maj. John Teackle (1693-1721) and Susanna (Upshur) Teackle. See 83*n*; 99*n*; Appendix, Note V.

[102] Son of Col. Edward Robins (1717-79) and Margaret (Teackle) Robins (1720/1-94). See 84*n*.

[103] Descent of Charles Smith: Isaac Smith I (d. 1760) of E. S. Va. m. Sarah, dau. of Maj. John West (the Younger) and Frances (Yardley) West, had Isaac Smith II (1734-1813) of "Selma," near Eastville, Northampton County, m. Elizabeth Custis Teackle (1742-1822), dau. of Thomas Teackle II (1711-69) and Elizabeth (Custis) Teackle (b. 1718), had Charles Smith m. Catherine Teackle (b. 1768). For Smith lineage, Thomas Teackle Upshur, *Sir George Yardley* (reprint from *American Historical Magazine*, Nashville, Tenn., October, 1896), *passim*; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; Upshur, MSS; Smith, "Smith, Teackle, Upshur Families." For West, Yardley, Teackle, Custis, Scarburgh, and other allied families, Appendix, Note XI.

February 8, 1837, married, first, Dr. George Yerby of Lancaster County, and had issue. She married, second, June 9, 1808, John Upshur of "Brownsville," born December 29, 1761, died September 29, 1842, and had issue.

H. Margaret Teackle, born February 28, 1778, died September 1846, married, January 7, 1796, Thomas Lyttleton Savage,[104] born January 8, 1760, died 1813, and had issue.

I. Leah Teackle, born August 4, 1780, died February 25, 1852, married, 1801, Peter Bowdoin,[105] died 1829, and had issue.

Will of Abel Upshur I[106]

In the Name of God Amen I Abel Upshur of Accomack County in Virginia being in Health and of perfect Mind and Memory and knowing the uncertainty of this transitory Life do by this my Last will and Testament order and dispose of that worldly Estate which God hath given me as followeth

First I command my Soul to God and ct:

Item Whereas I am now seised in Fee Simple of and in thirteen hundred Acres of Land situate and lying in Accomack County on Matchapungo River being the Plantation and part of the dividend of Land whereon I now live and which I hereby give and bequeath to my Son Arthur Upshur and his Heirs forever Nevertheless under and subject to the several Conditions and Provisions hereafter mentioned That is to say that not the said Arther and his Heirs forever shall hereafter prevent my Son John Upshur and his Heirs forever to hold

---

[104] Thomas Lyttleton Savage (1760-1813) of Northampton County was descendant of Ensign Thomas Savage who came to Jamestown, Va., in the *John and Francis* in 1607. Ensign Savage later became the first permanent English settler on the E. S. of Va. Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 214-280; *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 1(1894), 443-5.

[105] Peter Bowdoin (d. 1829) was descendant of Pierre Boudouin, French Huguenot, who immigrated to New England. Pierre left sons, James of Boston, and John (d. 1717) who moved to Northampton County, Va. James amassed a large fortune and left distinguished descendants among whom was James Bowdoin who founded Bowdoin College. John became the progenitor of the E. S. Va. Bowdoins. For Bowdoin lineage, Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; Bishop William Meade, *Old Churches, Ministers, and Families of Virginia* (Phila., 1857), I, 259*n*; *N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, 10(1856)), 78-9; Ames, *Studies of The Virginia Eastern Shore in the Seventeenth Century*, 47; Upshur, *Sir George Yardley*, 30-2; 127*n*.

[106] Will of Abel Upshur I, Accomack Wills, Etc., 1752-57, 209.

occupy and enjoy a certain Tract of Land and Plantation containing by Estimation Five hundred and Fifty Acres lying in Northampton County on Nassawadox Creek of which I am seised in Fee Tail and which I hereby give to my Son John Upshur and his Heirs forever but if it should happen that my said Son Arthur or his Heirs should at any time forever molest disturb let or anyway hinder my said Son John or his Heirs forever from the quiet and peaceable Enjoyment of the above bequeathed Premises or serve any Process in Order to evict my said Son John or his Heirs out of the Premises or any part thereof aforesaid or if at any time hereafter my said Son John or his Heirs should incline by Act of Assembly to break the Intail of the above given Premises and my Son Arthur or his Heirs should refuse to do any Act or Acts or sign any Deeds or Writings or refuse to settle the aforesaid Five hundred and Fifty Acres of Land to my said Son John bequeathed to the same befor at the proper Cost and Charges of my Son John and his Heirs when the same shall be demanded of him by my Son John before two or more credible Witnesses that then in all or anyone of the aforesaid Cases it is my Will that my Son Arthur forfeit the above thirteen hundred Acres of Land and that my Son John enter thereon and hold the same to him and his Heirs forever And in Case my Son John should die before he comes to lawful Age and without Issue then and in the aforesaid Case my Will is the above said Lands as in Manner as above specified and given to my Son John I Give to my Son Caleb Upshur and his Heirs forever and my Son Arthur to be under and Subject to the several Conditions and Provisions on the part and behalf of my Son Caleb as is above to my Son John

Item I Give and bequeath unto my Son Caleb Upshur a certain Tract or Parcel of Land situate lying and being in Accomack County near the Head of Watchaprig Creek containing about eight hundred Acres which said Land was lately purchased of Mr William Burton of Northampton County to my said Son Caleb and his Heirs forever but if it should happen that my said Son Caleb should depart this Life without Issue or make Sale of the said Land then my will is that the said Land shall go to my Son John Upshur and his Heirs forever And in Case my Son John should dye without Issue of his Body then my Will is that the said Land and Appurts shall go to my two Daughters Susannah and Elizabeth by an Equal Division between them and their Heirs forever. I also give to my Son Caleb all my personal Estate that properly belongs to me which shall be on the said Plantation at the Time of my Death as Cattle, Hogs, Sheep, Horses, and all other kind of living Creatures whatsoever also five Slaves Vizt Joshua, Isaac, Sarah, Nan and Peter also my New Walnut Desk my New Oval Table that was made at my House also two good Feather Beds and Bolsters with two Ruggs two pair of Blankets two Pair of Sheets to each Bed with Bedsteads Cords and Matts my Gun comonly called his also my Chest that is

comonly called my Fathers One hundred weight of good Pott iron and Fifty Pounds Currant Money to be levyed out of my Estate

Item I give and bequeath to my Son John all my personal Estate that shall be found at my Plantation at Nassawadox at the time of my Death that properly belongs to me also five Slaves Vizt Adra Will Jacob Mary and Alles also my large old Desk my largest Walnut Table a large Green Chest one Dozen of Black chairs also two good Feather Beds and Bolsters two Ruggs two Pair of Blankets two Pair of Sheets to each Bed Two Bedsteads Cords and Matts also the Gun called his and Fifty Pounds Current Money to be leveyed out of my Estate and One hundred Weight of good Pott Iron

Item Whereas I have lately purchased a Box of Glass containing near two hundred feet which I leave to my three Sons Arthur John and Caleb to be distributed as followeth that is to say the first of them that hath any Occasion of any either to build or Repair Houses upon any Land which I have given them by Virtue of this my Will to have it as long as there be any left any Quantity whatever they want more or less.

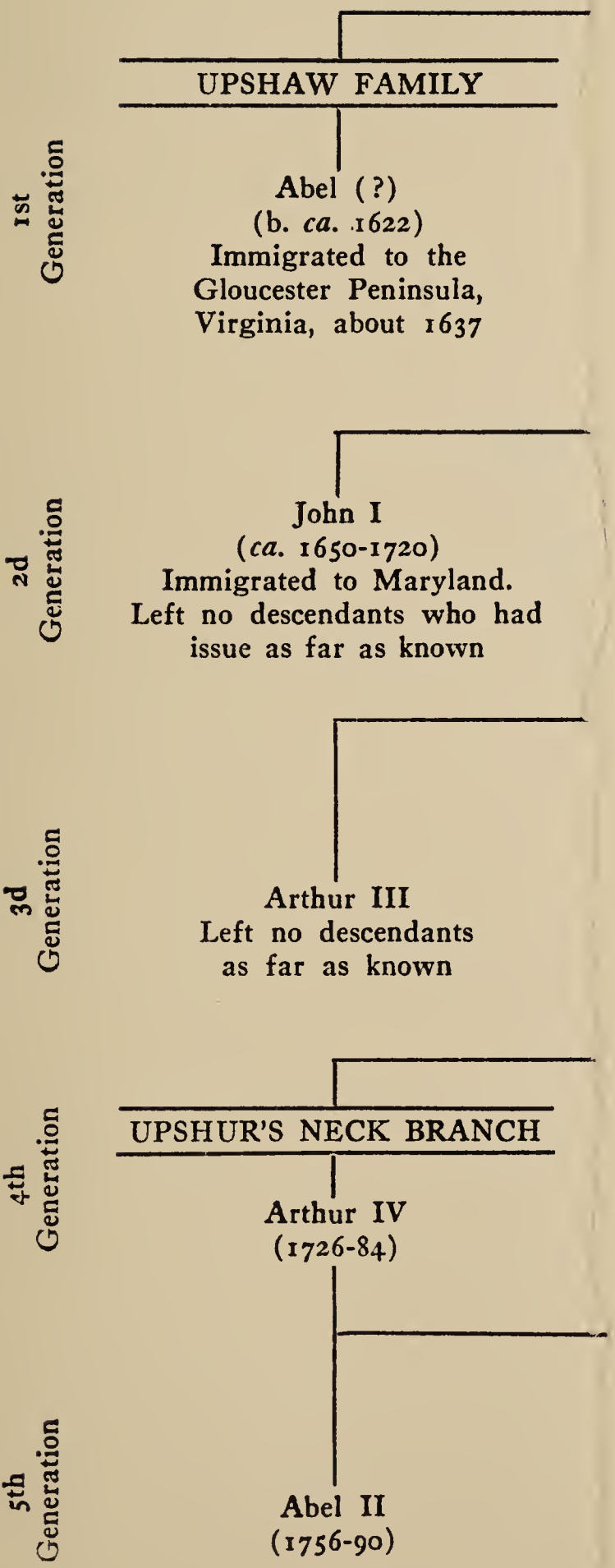
Item I give to my Daughter Susannah three Negroes (Vizt) Abraham Tabitha and Rose also two good Feather Beds and Bolsters and two Ruggs two Pair of Blankets and two Pair of Sheets to each Bed also the Best Suit of Curtains and Valence and one Bedstead Cord and Matt also one hundred pounds of good Pott Iron and her second Choice of my Chests and Fifty Pounds Current Money of Virginia to be leveyed out of my Estate.

Item I give to my Daughter Elizabeth three Negroes Vizt Adney Exeter and Rachel also two good Feather Beds and Bolsters with two Pair of Sheets to each Bed and two Pair of Blankets to each Bed the second best Suit of Curtains and Valeance with two Bedsteads Cords and Matts her second Choise of my Chests her choice of my Box Irons and Heaters One hundred Pounds of good Pott Iron and the smallest Cherry tree Table in the House I also give to my said Daughter Elizabeth two good Ruggs and Fifty Pounds Current Money of Virginia to be leveyed out of my Estate

Item I give all my Plate and Tea Ware to be equally divided to and between my two Daughters Susannah and Elizabeth

Item I Give all my Copper Brass Bell mettle and Pewter to be equally divided to and amongst my five Children Viz. Arthur, John, Caleb, Susannah and Elizabeth

Item my Will is that my Estate be not appraised and also that my Childrens Estates nor any part there of be not sold by my Executor or their Guardians but to be kept in Specie and further I appoint my Son Arthur Upshur to be



UPSHAW FAMILY

1st Generation

Abel (?)
(b. *ca.* 1622)
Immigrated to the Gloucester Peninsula, Virginia, about 1637

2d Generation

John I
(*ca.* 1650-1720)
Immigrated to Maryland.
Left no descendants who had issue as far as known

3d Generation

Arthur III
Left no descendants as far as known

UPSHUR'S NECK BRANCH

4th Generation

Arthur IV
(1726-84)

5th Generation

Abel II
(1756-90)

comonly called my Fathers One hundred weight of good Pott iron and Fifty Pounds Currant Money to be levyed out of my Estate

Item I give and bequeath to my Son John all my personal Estate that shall be found at my Plantation at Nassawadox at the time of my Death that properly belongs to me also five Slaves Vizt Adra Will Jacob Mary and Alles also my large old Desk my largest Walnut Table a large Green Chest one Dozen of Black chairs also two good Feather Beds and Bolsters two Ruggs two Pair of Blankets two Pair of Sheets to each Bed Two Bedsteads Cords and Matts also the Gun called his and Fifty Pounds Current Money to be leveyed out of my Estate and One hundred Weight of good Pott Iron

Item Whereas I have lately purchased a Box of Glass containing near two hundred feet which I leave to my three Sons Arthur John and Caleb to be distributed as followeth that is to say the first of them that hath any Occasion of any either to build or Repair Houses upon any Land which I have given them by Virtue of this my Will to have it as long as there be any left any Quantity whatever they want more or less.

Item I give to my Daughter Susannah three Negroes (Vizt) Abraham Tabitha and Rose also two good Feather Beds and Bolsters and two Ruggs two Pair of Blankets and two Pair of Sheets to each Bed also the Best Suit of Curtains and Valence and one Bedstead Cord and Matt also one hundred pounds of good Pott Iron and her second Choice of my Chests and Fifty Pounds Current Money of Virginia to be leveyed out of my Estate.

Item I give to my Daughter Elizabeth three Negroes Vizt Adney Exeter and Rachel also two good Feather Beds and Bolsters with two Pair of Sheets to each Bed and two Pair of Blankets to each Bed the second best Suit of Curtains and Valeance with two Bedsteads Cords and Matts her second Choise of my Chests her choice of my Box Irons and Heaters One hundred Pounds of good Pott Iron and the smallest Cherry tree Table in the House I also give to my said Daughter Elizabeth two good Ruggs and Fifty Pounds Current Money of Virginia to be leveyed out of my Estate

Item I give all my Plate and Tea Ware to be equally divided to and between my two Daughters Susannah and Elizabeth

Item I Give all my Copper Brass Bell mettle and Pewter to be equally divided to and amongst my five Children Viz. Arthur, John, Caleb, Susannah and Elizabeth

Item my Will is that my Estate be not appraised and also that my Childrens Estates nor any part there of be not sold by my Executor or their Guardians but to be kept in Specie and further I appoint my Son Arthur Upshur to be

UPSHUR FAMILY IN VIRGINIA

Thomas Upcher*
of
Colchester
Essex County, England

1st Generation

UPSHAW FAMILY

Abel (?)
(b. *ca.* 1622)
Immigrated to the Gloucester Peninsula, Virginia, about 1637

UPSHUR FAMILY

Arthur I
(1624-1709)
Immigrated to the Eastern Shore, Virginia, about 1637

UPCHER FAMILY

Robert
Free Burgess of Colchester in 1680. Descendants established Family Seat at Sheringham Hall, Norfolk County, England

2d Generation

John I
(*ca.* 1650-1720)
Immigrated to Maryland. Left no descendants who had issue as far as known

Arthur II
(*ca.* 1654-1738)

3d Generation

Arthur III
Left no descendants as far as known

Abel I
(1702-53)

BROWNSVILLE BRANCH

Thomas I
(*ca.* 1713-50/1)

4th Generation

UPSHUR'S NECK BRANCH

Arthur IV
(1726-84)

LEE'S NECK BRANCH

John II
(1741-99)

ROSE COTTAGE BRANCH

Caleb
(1744-78)

5th Generation

VAUCLUSE BRANCH

Abel II
(1756-90)

Littleton I
(1758-1811)

*Proof that Thomas Upcher of Colchester was father of Abel and Arthur I has not been found.

Guardian to my two Sons John and Caleb and to my Daughter Elizabeth til they come of Age and that he render no other Accounts of the Profits of their Estates than bring up and educating them and keeping their Estates in Specie

Item I Give all the remaining part of my Estate not by me all ready given in the foregoing part of this Will to my Son Arthur Upshur both real and Personal and Lastly I constitute and appoint my said Son Arther Upshur William Bagge and Thomas Teackle Executors of this my Last Will and Testament In Testimony where of I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal this Second Day of September Anno Domini 1753.

Abel Upshur Seal

Proved January 29, 1754.

CHAPTER V

UPSHUR'S NECK BRANCH

Arthur Upshur IV

(1726-84)

ARTHUR UPSHUR IV, son of Abel I and Rachel (Revell) Upshur, was born in 1726 at "Warwick" and as eldest son inherited this plantation upon the death of his father in 1753. In 1768 Arthur IV increased his holdings by purchasing from the estate of William Waters IV, 550 acres in Church Neck in Hungars Parish, Northampton County.[107] Later he acquired both the Manner and Quarter Plantations and additional acreage in Lunenburg County, Virginia, aggregating more than 2000 acres. Arthur IV was a successful planter and as ship owner was engaged in a prosperous trade with the British West Indies.[108] He served as an officer in the Continental Cavalry during the Revolutionary War,[109] and both he and his younger brother, Caleb Upshur, were members of the Accomack County Committee of Safety[110] established by the Continental Congress of 1774.

About 1755 Arthur IV married Leah Custis, daughter of Colonel Henry Custis[111] of "Matomkin Plantation," Accomack

---

[107] This tract later became known as "Vaucluse," and when resurveyed in 1812 was found to contain 758 acres.

[108] Appendix, Note VI.

[109] Appendix, Note III.

[110] Peter Force, *American Archives*, 4th ser. (Washington, 1837-53), I, 1059. See 185*n* and related text.

[111] Col. Henry Custis (d. 1732/3) was son of Col. John Custis III (1653-1713/14) of "Wilsonia," Northampton County, and Margaret (Michael) Custis, his first wife, dau.

County, and Anne (Kendall) Custis, his second wife. Arthur IV and Leah made their home and reared their children at "Warwick." Here they were buried and their tombstones are inscribed:

In
Memory of
Arthur Upshur
who departed this Life
Janry 15th 1784
in the 58th Year of his
Age

In
Memory of
Leah Upshur
who departed this Life
April the 24th 1792
in the 64 Year of her
Age[112]

WILL OF ARTHUR UPSHUR IV[113]

In the name of God Amen, I Arthur Upshur of the County of Accomack being of sound Sense and memory do make and Ordain this my will and Testament in manner and form following

Imprimis I recommend my soul into the hands of Almighty God who gave it and my body to the earth from whence it came and as to What worldly estate it hath pleased God to bestow on me, I dispose off in the Following manner.

Item I give to my loving wife one third of the Plantation I live on, together with the following negroes during her natural life, to wit. Derrum and his wife Tabb, Burreker, Rachel, Leah, Alias Squace, Leah Commonly called wood's Leah, and a boy called Peter,—I also give her one Third of the Stock of Cattle,

---

of Capt. John Michael (*ca.* 1625-78) and Elizabeth (Thorogood) Michael, dau. of Adam Thorogood (1603-40) and Sarah (Offley) Thorogood. Col. Henry Custis was grandson of Maj.-Gen. John Custis II (*ca.* 1630-1695/6) of "Arlington," Northampton County, and brother of John Custis IV (1678-1749) of Williamsburg, Va., whose son, Daniel Parke Custis, married Martha Dandridge, subsequently the wife of George Washington. Col. Henry Custis was second cousin of Thomas Custis (*ca.* 1685-1721) of "Deep Creek" (see 90*n*), and each married, first, the sister of the other (Henry married Tabitha Scarburgh Custis and Thomas married Elizabeth Custis). Col. Henry Custis married, second, Anne, dau. of Capt. William Kendall II (1659-96) and Ann (Mason) Kendall (see 91*n*). Anne Kendall had previously married Thomas Custis, supra, on June 24, 1717, and after Thomas's death she married Col. Henry Custis. Thus Henry and Thomas Custis married the sister of the other and each married Anne Kendall. Col. Henry and Anne (Kendall) Custis had several children among whom was Leah Custis who married Arthur Upshur IV. Will of Col. Henry Custis probated March 6, 1732/3, Accomack Wills, 1727-37, 127. For Custis, Thorogood, Michael, and Offley lineages, Harrison, *Harrison, Waples and Allied Families*, 88-108, 128-38; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim.*

[112] The date of Leah's death inscribed on her tombstone is nineteen days earlier than the recorded date her will was admitted to probate, so one of the dates is obviously in error, probably the former. Tombstone dates are notoriously inaccurate.

[113] Will of Arthur Upshur IV, Accomack Wills, Etc., 1780-84, 477-80.

Horses, Sheep and Hoggs and beds and furniture on the plantation I live on; Also my riding chair, six Table Spoons, twelve Tea spoons and the old Silver Tankard (they being the first Importation) to her and her Heirs forever, in lieu of her Dower in all my other Estate

Item I Give my son Littleton Upshur and his Heirs forever Five hundred Acres of Land, more or less, lying in Church neck in the parish of Hungars and County of Northampton also a Tract of land in the County of Lunenburg which I bought of Col. David Garland Containing Thirteen hundred and fifty Acres, more or less, Called the manner Plantation, and also five hundred and twenty one Acres, more or less, in the said County which I purchased of Mr. John Garland, Adjoining the said manner Plantation,—Also the following negro's on the Hungars or Church Neck Plantation, to wit, James, Isaac, Harry, Pegg, and all her Children, Rachel and all her Children, Rose and all her Children, together with two on the home Plantation called Jessee and Pleasant also the stock of Horses, Cattle, Sheep, Hogs and Plantation utensils with the Household and Kitchen Furniture on the said Hungars Plantation and Twenty five head of Cattle on my home plantation and Also half the Bel metal.

Item I Give to my Nephew Arthur Upshur, son of my brother John, Three hundred and Seventy Acres of Land, more or less called the Quarter plantation, and which I purchased of Col. Garland also A young sorrel mare of three years old to him and his Heirs forever.

Item I give to my son Abel Upshur and his Heirs forever, the plantation I live on together with all my negroes and personal Estate not before given and the reversion of them after my wifes death.

Item Notwithstanding I have given my two sons their Estates in fee, it is my desire if the law will Admit of it, That in case my son Abel Should die without leaving a male issue, that my sons Estates real and Personal hereby given them shall be changed, that is to say, Abel's shall go to Littleton and Littletons to Abel's fee male issue in fee, But in case both my sons die without leaving issue male, That then it is my desire that their Estates not be Changed, but that their Heirs may enjoy them respectively forever.

Lastly I do Appoint my loving wife and my two son's Abel and Littleton Upshur my whole and Sole Executrix and Executors of this my last Will and Testament hereby revoking all other Wills by me heretofore made In Testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and Affixed my seal this fifth day of September one Thousand Seven hundred and eighty one.

Arthur Upshur seal

Proved March 30, 1784.

The will of Leah (Custis) Upshur was dated November 25, 1790, and proved April 5, 1792.[114] Leah mentioned in her will daughters-in-law Elizabeth Upshur and Ann Upshur, grandsons Caleb (Brown) Upshur and Abel (Parker) Upshur, granddaughters Juliet Upshur and Nancy Upshur, and son Littleton Upshur.

Arthur IV and Leah (Custis) Upshur had issue: Abel II; Littleton I.

I. Abel Upshur II was born in 1756 at "Warwick" and as eldest son inherited this plantation. He married, first, Ann Hack[115] who died without issue. Abel II married (bond dated November 15, 1779), second, Elizabeth Gore,[116] born December 28, 1762, by whom he had three children. Abel II died March 25, 1790, and his widow married, May 14, 1792, John Upshur of "Brownsville" but bore John no children. Elizabeth died January 1794. She had requested that she be buried at "Warwick" beside her first husband, and there she was buried. The inscriptions on their tombstones read:

In
Memory of
Abel Upshur
who departed this Life
March 25th 1790
In the 34th Year of his
Age

In Memory of
Elizabeth Upshur
wife of
Abel Upshur
who departed this life
Jan 16 1794
Aged 31 Years 10 Months

---

114 Will of Leah (Custis) Upshur, Accomack Wills, 1788-94, 522.

115 According to an old Hack Family Bible, Ann Hack was born April 10, 1750, and married Abel Upshur. Abel was therefore six years younger than Ann. She was dau. of Peter Hack (1717-1802) of Hack's Neck, Accomack County, and Anne (Custis) Hack, dau. of Col. Henry Custis and Anne (Kendall) Custis, his second wife. For Hack lineage, James E. Mears, *Hack's Neck and Its People* (Chicago, 1937); Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim.*

116 Descent of Elizabeth Gore: Maximillian Gore (d. 1686) of the E. S. Va., had Daniel Gore (d. 1720), had William Gore (d. 1752), had Daniel Gore (d. 1770) m. Susanna, dau. of Thomas Teackle II (1711-69) and Elizabeth (Custis) Teackle (b. *ca.* 1718), had Elizabeth Gore (1762-94) m. Abel Upshur II (1756-90). After the death of Elizabeth's father, Alexander Stockley became her guardian.

Abel Upshur II died intestate, and Upshur's Neck was divided by law among his three children. Relating to the division of this property, there is recorded in the Accomack records a partition suit dated March 3, 1801[117] from which the following extract is taken:

John Eyre and Ann, his wife, Littleton D. Teackle and Elizabeth, his wife vs.—Partition Suit

Arthur Upshur

That one Abel Upshur, Esq., was lately seized as of fee of and in a tract of land called Upshur's Neck, supposed to contain 2400 acres, lying on Matchepungo Bay and Matchepungo River, and being so seized in his life-time had issue the said Ann, now the wife of John Eyre, the said Elizabeth, now the wife of the said Littleton D. Teackle, and the said Arthur Upshur, and the said Abel Upshur being so seized afterwards, to-wit: on the [25th] day of March, 1790, died, whereby the said land came and descended to the said Ann, Elizabeth, and Arthur as the children and co-heirs of the said Abel Upshur, deceased. Edmund Bayly appointed guardian to the infant defendant, Arthur Upshur, to defend this suit.

Abel Upshur II and Elizabeth (Gore) Upshur, his second wife, had issue:

A. Ann Upshur, eldest daughter of her parents, was born October 4, 1780, at "Warwick." She married (bond dated February 24, 1800) John Eyre[118] of "Eyre Hall," near Eastville, Northampton County. Ann inherted the northern third of Upshur's Neck, including the home-place, "Warwick," but moved to "Eyre Hall" to live after her marriage. Following her death without issue in 1829, her part of Upshur's Neck passed to her hus-

---

[117] Stratton Nottingham, *Land Causes Accomack County, Virginia, 1727-1826* (Onancock, Va., 1930), 37.

[118] Descent of John Eyre: Thomas Eyre I (d. 1657), E. S. Va. immigrant, m. Susannah Baker, had Thomas Eyre II (d. 1715) m. Jane Severn, had Severn Eyre (d. 1728) m. Gertrude Harmanson, had Littleton Eyre (d. 1768) m. Bridget Harmanson, had Severn Eyre (d. 1773) m. Margaret Taylor, had John Eyre (1768-1855) m. Ann Upshur (1780-1829). For Eyre lineage, Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 190-7.

band, John Eyre, but in his will of 1855 he left this property to Ann's nieces.

Ann and John were buried in the graveyard at "Eyre Hall" where the epitaph on Ann's tombstone is still legible:

This Tomb
Is consecrated by her husband John Eyre
and the inscription on it by Arthur Upshur
an only brother, to the memory of
ANN M. EYRE
Daughter of Abel and Elizabeth Upshur.

She was born the 4th of October 1780
and died on the 17th day of June 1829.
Ye who have partaken for years
the freely extended hospitality of the
delightful mansion over which she
presided: who were well acquainted
with the benignity of her disposition,
her sympathies with the sorrowing and
distressed and the vivid brilliancy of
her well tutored, refined and classical
mind, require not the aid of an
obituary eulogy to elicit a
tributary tear and sigh when this
monument meets your pensive attention.
But the time cometh when the rising
generation of females will only
possess a traditionary account of
her many virtues and shining qualities.
To such I would say—Go do as she has
done—Peace be with thy immortal Spirit
my beloved sister
No tongue can speak but in thy praise.

B. Elizabeth Upshur, second daughter of Abel II and Elizabeth (Gore) Upshur, was born March 12, 1783, at "Warwick." Like her sister, Ann, and her brother, Arthur Upshur V, Elizabeth inherited a handsome

fortune and at the time of her marriage had considerable property, slaves, money, and other valuable possessions. In the partition of her father's estate she received the lower third of Upshur's Neck containing 690 acres which she sold in 1805. Elizabeth married (bond dated May 27, 1800) Littleton Dennis Teackle,[119] born September 29, 1777, died November 1850, a successful banker of Princess Anne, Maryland, where Elizabeth and Littleton built the "Teackle Mansion" in which they entertained bountifully.

Elizabeth died September 28, 1835. Both she and her husband were buried in the churchyard at St. Andrews Episcopal Church, Princess Anne. No tombstones mark their graves. Issue:

1. Elizabeth Upshur Teackle, born February 4, 1801, died March 10, 1875, married, April 20, 1839, Aaron Balderston Quinby,[120] born August 19, 1795, died April 29, 1853. Elizabeth was a well-educated woman and a charming hostess. She and her husband established their home at "Warwick" which Elizabeth inherited from her uncle-in-law, John Eyre. Issue:

   a. Upshur Balderston Quinby, born August 20, 1841, at "Warwick," died January 29, 1898, married, November 23, 1864, Georgianna G. Richardson, born November 14, 1845, died November 30, 1896, daughter of Thomas S. and Margaret B. (Walter) Richardson of Accomack County. Upshur studied law at the University of Virginia, later becoming a prominent member of the Accomack County bar. Upon the death of his mother in 1875 he inherited

---

[119] Littleton Dennis Teackle was son of John Teackle (1753-1817) of "Kegotank," Accomack County, and Elizabeth (Dennis) Teackle (1760-1811). See 98*n*; 99*n*.

[120] Son of Aaron Quinby (1757-1849) and Lydia (Balderston) Quinby (1759-1820). See 122*n*.

"Warwick"[121] where he established his home and reared his family. Upshur was deeply interested in his family history and spent many years collecting genealogical information. After his death his collection of family papers and manuscripts was given to the Alderman Library, University of Virginia.[122] Both Upshur and Georgianna were buried at "Warwick." Issue:

1. Margaret Upshur Quinby, born September 29, 1865, married, August 3, 1892, Edgar Franklin.

2. Thomas Balderston Quinby, born April 8, 1867, married, June 18, 1890, Catherine Bagwell, daughter of General Edmund R. Bagwell of Accomack County, born June 2, 1840, died June 13, 1876, son of Dr. Thomas P. Bagwell, descendant of Henry Bagwell, Clerk of the first court of Northampton County, the records of which are preserved from 1632.

3. Elizabeth Walter Quinby, born August 24, 1869, married Professor E. Sumpter Smith of Bedford City, Virginia.

4. Littleton Dennis Teackle Quinby, born August 27, 1871, married Lula Belle Hemphill, daughter of W. A. Hemphill of Atlanta, Georgia.

5. Georgianna Richardson Quinby, born February 8, 1876, died 1901, married G. Walter Mapp of Accomack County.

6. Jessie Marvin Quinby, born May 1, 1878, married Charles Graham Evans of Roanoke Island,

---

[121] Upshur Balderston Quinby left "Warwick" to his wife for life, and then to his children. In 1912 the heirs sold, thus the property passed from the Upshur line after almost two hundred and fifty years of ownership.

[122] For Upshur Balderston Quinby genealogical collection bearing on the Upshur, Quinby, Dennis, Teackle, and allied families, see Quinby Papers, Alderman Library, U. Va.

North Carolina.

7. Henrietta Chauncey Quinby, born June 29, 1880, married, June 8, 1895, Robert Claiborne Hale of Franklin County, Virginia.

C. Arthur Upshur V was born in 1789 at "Warwick." He was the youngest of the three children of Abel II and Elizabeth (Gore) Upshur, and was called "Long Arthur Upshur" because of his height. Arthur V and his two sisters were left orphans by the early death of their parents, and were reared and educated by their stepfather, John Upshur of "Brownsville," and by their uncle, Littleton Upshur I of "Vaucluse," who were appointed guardians. That the children were particularly fond of their stepfather is indicated by letters written to him during their school days in Philadelphia and elsewhere, letters couched in affectionate and grateful terms for his kindness. One letter from Arthur V when he was twenty-one acknowledged receipt of his patrimony and added ". . . whereas it was comparatively a small pittance when my father died, under your management it has become a handsome fortune." In addition to his share of Upshur's Neck, in 1811 Arthur V purchased a 196-acre plantation at the northern end of Savage's Neck, Northampton County, called "White Cliff," where he established his home and reared his children.

On December 12, 1810, Arthur V married Anne B. Steele, born October 24, 1791, second daughter of James and Mary (Nevett) Steele[123] of Cambridge and Annapolis, Maryland.

Arthur V died in May 1830, and was survived by his wife and three children. Since there were no sons, the

[123] For Steele lineage, Elias Jones, *Revised History of Dorchester County, Maryland* (Baltimore, 1925), 458-67.

Upshur's Neck branch became extinct in the male line. Arthur's will[124] proved in Northampton County on July 12, 1830, was long and meticulous and set forth his wishes in every respect. The following provision leaves no doubt as to his morbid disposition:

With regard to the disposal of my body after death, I strictly enjoin my Executors to have it placed in a Common Coffin the lid of which is upon no account to be shut or screwed down until Corruption so far takes place as to render the last service of my friends disagreeable to them, nor even then or at any time after is the lid to be fastened down; but to be so made of light materials as to fit over the bottom of the coffin. This coffin is in no wise to be deeper under the ground than the lid thereof, and that part which lies below the earth to be encased in brick work which is to be raised 4 ft. above ground and a door or opening left on one side 18 inches square. To close this opening I direct a door suspended by hinges from the top without any fastening as its own gravity will keep it shut. To accomplish this mode of Sepulchure, should my Executors neglect to have it done as ordered, I leave $500 out of the mass of my property to any individual who will dig up my body and reinter it according to the true intent and method of burial above described. On the top of the brick work I wish and order a plain white marble slab with the following Inscription deeply carved, viz—Under this rest the remains of Arthur Upshur, who was a child of misfortune and sorrow from his cradle until his death; the result of a feeble constitution and endless vexations of many kinds. In the world of Spirits he cherishes the fond hope of brighter prospects. My children, whenever affliction overshadows your brow, repair hither and look on this marble—It will teach you that happiness is not of this world.

The grave of Arthur V has not been found. It has been claimed that he was buried either at Baltimore or Annapolis and that his burial was kept secret so that the absurd conditions of his will could never be carried out. His wife died March 2, 1835, and was buried in the cemetery on Northwest Street, Annapolis.

---

[124] Will of Arthur Upshur V, Northampton Wills, Etc., 1829-53, 5.

Arthur V and Anne B. (Steele) Upshur had issue:

1. Virginia Upshur, born October 13, 1812, probably at "White Cliff," died June 7, 1843, married, November 22, 1832, at Annapolis, Daniel Lloyd[125] of Cambridge, Maryland, born July 20, 1812, died January 4, 1875, son of Governor Edward Lloyd of Maryland and Sally Scott (Murray) Lloyd. Issue:

    a. Edward Lloyd, born April 15, 1835, died August 26, 1903. He was an invalid the greater part of his life and never married.

    b. Arthur Upshur Lloyd, born August 17, 1837.

    c. Daniel Lloyd, born April 1, 1839, never married.

    d. Upshur Lloyd, born July 10, 1841, married Hortense Castleman. This couple established their home in Easton, Maryland.

    e. Anne Steele Lloyd, born 1843, died May 2, 1890, married, June 13, 1855, Archibald Stirling, Jr.,[126] born June 13, 1832, died May 20, 1892, U. S. District Attorney of Baltimore. Issue:

        1. Archibald Stirling married Estelle Walter.

        2. Arthur Upshur Stirling married Anne Reifsnider.

        3. Franklin Anderson Stirling died young.

        4. James Edward Stirling never married.

---

[125] Daniel Lloyd (1812-75) was descendant of Edward Lloyd I who immigrated to Virginia in 1623 but moved to the Eastern Shore of Maryland in 1649 and finally settled in Talbot County on the Wye River. Daniel Lloyd's grandfather was Edward Lloyd V (1779-1834), U. S. Senator and Governor of Maryland. Christopher Lloyd, "Lloyd Family," *Md. Hist. Mag.*, 7(1912), 420-30; Hanson, *Old Kent: The Eastern Shore of Maryland*, 28-35; Earle, *The Chesapeake Bay Country*, 351-8; *Maryland Original Research Society* (Baltimore, 1906), I, 11-17.

[126] Archibald Stirling, Jr. (1832-92) was son of Archibald Stirling (1798-1888) of "Montrose," near Baltimore, and Elizabeth Anne (Welsh) Stirling, and grandson of James Stirling who emigrated from Edinburgh to Baltimore in 1774.

5. Virginia Upshur Stirling never married.

6. Anne Lloyd Stirling married William Penniman of Baltimore.

2. Laura A. Upshur, born November 13, 1816, probably at "White Cliff," died August 13, 1898, married (bond dated April 21, 1834) Severn Eyre Bowdoin,[127] born May 4, 1811, died September 7, 1889. Laura inherited that part of Upshur's Neck which, after her marriage, was called "Bowdoin Farm" and here she reared her family. Following the Civil War Laura and Severn sold the farm and moved to Baltimore. Both were buried in the churchyard at Christ Church, Eastville, where many kinsfolk of the Upshur Family are buried. Issue:

a. Lloyd Bowdoin died in early manhood, unmarried.

b. Peter Bowdoin died unmarried.

c. Severn Eyre Bowdoin died unmarried. He went to sea in 1865 and was frozen to death off the coast of New Jersey, near Long Branch.

d. Nannie Steele Bowdoin married. No issue.

e. Virginia Upshur Bowdoin married Dr. Edward B. Finney, of Onancock, Virginia. Issue:

1. Ethel Finney married Warren Ames, Accomack County attorney.

f. Arthur Bowdoin became a seaman and was lost at sea. It is reported that he married a young lady in Australia. Issue, if any, not determined.

g. Mary Bowdoin married.

---

[127] Descent of Severn Eyre Bowdoin; Pierre Boudouin, immigrant, had John Bowdoin (d. 1717), had Peter Bowdoin (d. 1746) m. Susanna Preeson, had John Bowdoin (d. 1775) m. Grace Stringer, had Peter Bowdoin (d. 1829) m. 2d, Leah Teackle (1780-1852), had Severn Eyre Bowdoin (1811-89) m. Laura A. Upshur (1816-98). See 105*n*.

h. Charles Teackle Bowdoin married Louisa Bowdoin Smith,[128] his first cousin, and had issue. After Charles's death Louisa married, second, Judge Theodore S. Garnett of Norfolk but bore him no children.

1. Elizabeth Bowdoin married a Mr. Woodside of Baltimore.

2. Charles Teackle Bowdoin II.

3. Emily Louise Upshur died unmarried, an elderly lady. In 1857 she sold her part of Upshur's Neck which has since been known as "Bunting Farm."

II. Littleton Upshur I. A record of Littleton Upshur I and his descendants will be found in the Vaucluse branch of this genealogy.

---

[128] Upshur, *Sir George Yardley*, 30-2; 105*n*; 127*n*.

VAUCLUSE, NORTHAMPTON COUNTY
Birthplace of Abel Parker Upshur I

Chapter VI

VAUCLUSE BRANCH

Littleton Upshur I

(1758-1811)

LITTLETON UPSHUR I,[129] second and youngest son of Arthur IV and Leah (Custis) Upshur, was born on April 26, 1758, at "Warwick." Littleton I and his older brother, Abel II, were the fifth generation of Upshurs to live at "Warwick" prior to the Revolutionary War. These boys grew up during the exciting years preceding the war and perhaps spent many hours listening to adventurous tales of sea captains who anchored their ships off "Warwick" in Upshur's Bay. Though there is no record of their participation in the Revolutionary War, it is quite likely that both boys served in the local militia, perhaps in the company of Minute Men of which their father was an officer.

By his father's will of 1784, Littleton I inherited the "Manner Plantation" in Lunenburg County, Virginia, containing 1350 acres, and a 550-acre tract in Church Neck, Northampton County. The Church Neck tract had been previously given to Littleton I about 1779 when he reached his majority, and it is believed that he went there about that time or immediately

---

[129] The first member of the Upshur Family to be christened "Littleton" was Littleton Upshur I of "Vaucluse" who was probably named for his uncle-in-law, Littleton Dennis. See 98*n*. For Littleton lineage, 84*n*.

following the war to build his future home which he called "Vaucluse."[130]

About 1781 he married Ann Parker,[131] born August 25, 1763, died June 18, 1820, descendant of one of the most prominent families on the Shore. This couple reared nine children, all of whom grew up in the beautiful and cultural environment of "Vaucluse."

Littleton I was one of the most popular and influential men of his time on the Eastern Shore. He was active in church, social, and civic affairs, and was honored and esteemed by many friends throughout Virginia. Littleton died intestate[132] on August 27, 1811, and was buried in the family burying ground at "Warwick."[133] The September 6, 1811, issue of the *Richmond Enquirer* gives the following account of Littleton Upshur's death:

THE DEATH OF LITTLETON UPSHUR, ESQ.

Extract of a letter from a gentleman in Norfolk to his friend in this city, dated 29 Aug. 1811.

Before this reaches you, the newspapers will have informed you of the death of our esteemed friend Littleton Upshur, Esq. He died the evening before last, of an appopleptic fit, which lasted about 12 hours—I am told that he left your house the preceding Saturday on his return from the Springs in better health and

---

[130] For description of "Vaucluse," Appendix, Note VII; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 418-20.

[131] Descent of Ann Parker: Capt. George Parker I (d. 1674) of "Poplar Grove," near Onancock, Accomack County, had Maj. George Parker II (d. 1724), had George Parker III (d. 1734), had George Parker IV (d. 1755), had George Parker V (1735-84) m. 1st, 1756, Adah Bagwell (1734-66), had Ann Parker (1763-1820) m. Littleton Upshur I (1758-1811) of "Vaucluse." Ann was sister of both Judge George Parker VI (1761-1826) of "Kendall Grove," Northampton County, and Col. Thomas ("Hangman Tom") Parker (1757-1819). See "The Parker Family of Northampton and Accomack Counties," *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 6(1898-9), 412-18; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim.*

[132] For division of Littleton's estate among his children, Stratton Nottingham, *Virginia Land Causes, Northampton County, 1731-1868* (Onancock, Va., 1931), 63. For inventory and appraisement of his estate, Northampton Wills and Inventories, 1825-29, 137.

[133] Mary Jane Stith Upshur writing under her pen name of "Fanny Fielding" in an article on "Vaucluse" (see Appendix, Note VII) in *The Land We Love*, 1(1866), 410-16, stated that Littleton Upshur I was buried at "Vaucluse." Actually, he was buried at "Warwick" where his tombstone, erected by his nine children, is in the family burying ground.

spirits than he had enjoyed for some time before. The Eastern Shore of Virginia will long mourne the loss of one of her noblest sons. There are but few upon this side of the Bay who knew his worth better than myself. He was an upright, just and honest man—liberal and benevolent. I will leave it to a stronger pen than mine to portray the character of this worthy man.

But my friend, what shall I say of Vaucluse—will you go with me to visit and soothe the feelings of this most amiable family; come then and let us away—we will advise them not to grieve overmuch—that tho' his race was short (about 55 years of age) it was glorious—and that he is gone to the command of his Heavenly Father to join his family above—that by his attention, his care, and his superior judgement he has left them everything wherewith to be comforted.

I shall feel extremely gratified in visiting with you once more that seat of happiness where nature and art so effectually combine to banish melancholy, and to drive our sorrows away.

Littleton I and Ann (Parker) Upshur had issue: Littleton II; Juliet; Caleb Brown; Arthur Brown; Abel Parker I; John; Leah Custis; George Parker; Elizabeth Parker.

I. Littleton Upshur II, eldest son of his parents, was born on August 14, 1783, at "Vaucluse." In 1811 his father gave him a tract of land a few miles from "Vaucluse," farther up Church Neck on Hungars Creek, known for generations as "Pear Plain."[134] Near the main dwelling, probably built by Littleton II about the time his father gave him the land, is an enormous hackberry tree, one of the largest trees on the Shore.

On December 23, 1810, Littleton II married Mary Vaughn Wilson,[135] born July 28, 1793, died October 20, 1829. This couple made their home at "Pear Plain" where they reared a family of twelve children of whom only six lived to be grown.

Littleton II represented Northampton County for several years in both the Virginia House of Delegates and Senate.

---

[134] For description of "Pear Plain," Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 405-7.

[135] Dau. of Mayor Thomas Wilson (d. 1818) of Richmond and Mary (Vaughn) Wilson (died in the burning of the Richmond Theatre in 1811).

He was a member of Masonic Lodge No. 11 of Eastville and a Vestryman of Hungars Church as his father had been. He served as Captain in the Twenty-seventh Regiment of Virginia Militia for Northampton County in the War of 1812, along with several of his brothers.[136] In later years he was known as Colonel Littleton Upshur, and his name was so recorded in many of the records of Northampton and Accomack Counties. Littleton II died October 9, 1832. The following account of his death appeared in the October 19, 1832, issue of the *Richmond Whig*.[137]

> Died on the 10th [9th] day of October 1832 after a painful illness of 9 weeks at his residence in Northampton, Colonel Lyttleton Upshur—the ornament of the Court of which he had long been a member—frequently a member of the Legislature—a highly respected and valuable citizen, and an excellent man.

Littleton II and Mary Vaughn (Wilson) Upshur had issue:

A. Thomas Littleton Upshur, born November 25, 1812, died December 22, 1815.

B. Anne Elizabeth Upshur, born January 10, 1814, died October 17, 1863, married, March 27, 1841, Peter Poythress Mayo[138] of Norfolk who had previously married, 1824, Anne's aunt, Leah Custis Upshur.[139] Issue:

1. Anne Mayo.

---

[136] Stratton Nottingham, *Revolutionary Soldiers and Sailors from Northampton County, Virginia* (Onancock, Va., 1929), 47, 48, 57.

[137] A eulogy of Col. Littleton Upshur appeared in the Oct. 26, 1832, issue of the *Richmond Whig*.

[138] Descent of Peter Poythress Mayo: Maj. William Mayo (1684-1744) immigrated to Virginia from Barbadoes about 1723. He laid off Richmond for William Byrd in 1737. He m. 2d, Ann Perratt, had Joseph Mayo (*ca.* 1739-1802) m. Martha Tabb of Gloucester, had Joseph Mayo (1771-1820) m. Jane Poythress, dau. of Peter Poythress of "Branchester," Prince George County, Va., had Peter Poythress Mayo m. 1st, 1824, Leah Custis Upshur, m. 2d, 1841, Anne Elizabeth Upshur (1814-63). For Mayo lineage, *Richmond Standard*, issue of July 17, 1880.

[139] See 150*n*.

2. John Mayo.

3. Wynne Mayo.

C. Mary Eliza Neilson Upshur, born August 9, 1815, died September 20, 1825.

D. Dr. Arthur Wilson Upshur, born February 8, 1817, married Esther Burton Parramore Bayly.[140] Dr. Upshur attended the University of Pennsylvania Medical School in 1834 and the University of Virginia in 1836-37. He died at sea September 2, 1844, and was buried off the coast of Cuba. Issue:

1. Mary Juliet Upshur married Leonard F. Godwin, son of Edmund S. and Rosy P. (Mears) Godwin of Northampton County. Issue:

a. Marian Godwin married, first, Elton Bowdoin Smith, born March 20, 1866, died May 23, 1894, son of Peter Bowdoin Smith, born December 23, 1830, died March 13, 1889, and Kate A. (Cropper) Smith, born September 23, 1839, died November 13, 1915. Issue:

1. Mary Upshur Smith married John H. Roberts, Jr., and had issue.

Marian Godwin married, second, John Dunton, son of James S. and Mary (Churn) Dunton of Northampton County. Issue:

2. Alexander Dunton.

---

[140] Descent of Esther Burton Parramore Bayly: Thomas Bayly (1737/8-1808) of "Hills Farm," Accomack County (his tombstone inscription at "Hills Farm" says that he was son of Edmund Bayly, grandson of of Edmund Bayly, and great grandson of Richard Bayly of Craddock), m. Ann Drummond (1742/3-1801), had Edmund Bayly (1763-1805) m. Rachel Revell Upshur (1771-1816), dau. of John Upshur II (1741-99), had James Upshur Bayly (1796-1821) m. Esther Parramore, had Esther Burton Parramore Bayly m. Dr. Arthur Wilson Upshur (1817-44). See tombstones at "Hills Farm." Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*, particularly II, 979-82; *Wm. and Mary Quar.*, 1st ser., 7(1898-99), 106-8; Stratton Nottingham, *Wills and Administrations, Accomack County, Virginia, 1663-1800* (Onancock, Va., 1931), *passim.*

b. Mary Godwin married a Mr. Turlington of Fair Oaks, Accomack County, and had issue.

2. Abel Parker Upshur II, born May 1, 1843, married Columbia Brickhouse, daughter of Elam L. and Elizabeth P. (Fitchett) Brickhouse of "Goshen Farm," Brickhouse Neck, Northampton County. After the Civil War this couple made their home in Baltimore. Issue:

a. Eloise Elam Upshur, born 1873, died October 1942, married Ira Williams of Hillsboro, Maryland. No issue.

E. Elizabeth Dennis Upshur, born June 13, 1818, died September 3, 1819.

F. Juliet Littleton Upshur, born July 18, 1820, died about 1893, married, January 30, 1839, Thomas Edward Evans,[141] a merchant of Eastville. Juliet and Thomas left the Eastern Shore in 1843 and settled in York County at "Cherry Hall," about seven miles from Williamsburg. When "Cherry Hall" was being repaired in 1950 a painting of the Upshur coat of arms was discovered on a bedroom wall under a layer of wallpaper. A granddaughter informed the author that the painting had been done by Thomas Harold Wilson Upshur during one of his frequent visits to "Cherry Hall" to see his sister, Juliet. Issue:

1. Upshur Evans.
2. Thomas Evans, died 1888 at Hampton, Virginia.
3. Margaret Upshur Evans.
4. Sallie Evans.

---

[141] Son of John Kitson Evans (d. 1815) of Accomack County and Margaret (Jacob) Evans, and said John Kitson Evans was son of Judge Thomas Edward Evans (d. 1815) of the Accomack Superior Court.

5. Mary Wilson Evans married Robert Joseph Mahone and had issue.

G. Lucy Parker Upshur, born December 7, 1822, died December 13, 1822.

H. Harriet Wilson Upshur, born January 30, 1824, died August 16, 1824.

I. Ellen Vaughn Savage Upshur, born January 30, 1824, a twin sister of Harriet above, died 1861, married (bond dated November 8, 1847) Dr. William W. Gregory of Richmond. Issue:

1. Arthur Gregory.

J. A male child, stillborn March 25, 1826.

K. Littleton Upshur III, born July 31, 1827, died March 15, 1884, married, 1855, Mittie Macon, born July 18, 1840, died June 23, 1891, daughter of Dr. Henry J. and Arabella K. (Allston) Macon of Warrenton, North Carolina, where the young couple made their first home. Littleton III served in the Confederate Army during the Civil War, following which he moved to Greenwood, Mississippi, where he became Sheriff of Leflore County. Issue:

1. Henry Macon Upshur, born April 4, 1858, at Warrenton, died April 6, 1879, at Greenwood, unmarried.
2. Thomas Hawkins Upshur, born June 19, 1860, at Warrenton, died August 18, 1893, at Greenwood, married, February 26, 1889, Lula Safon Lewers, daughter of the Honorable Charles Allen Lewers of Calhoun County, Mississippi. Issue:

a. Thomas Littleton Upshur, born December 28, 1890.

b. Lula May Upshur, born August 14, 1892.

3. Littleton Upshur IV, born January 16, 1863, died September 11, 1867.

4. Nellie Upshur, born February 22, 1869, married, first, February 1886, Robert Portwood, no issue; married, second, June 16, 1896, John P. Lewis, no issue; married, third, December 28, 1906, William H. Kelly.

5. Mamie Upshur, born March 12, 1874, died November 22, 1895, married, January 15, 1895, Henry Johnson. No issue.

L. Dr. Thomas Harold Wilson Upshur, born October 20, 1829, died April 12, 1890, at Atlanta, Georgia, married Maria Louise Shepherd, youngest daughter of Samuel and Maria L. (Davis) Shepherd of Richmond. During the Civil War Dr. Upshur served as Assistant Surgeon in the Richmond General Hospital No. 13, known as the Prison Hospital. Thomas Teackle Upshur II claimed in his Upshur Family manuscripts that Dr. Upshur and his wife lived near Williamsburg in James City County, Virginia, where they reared a family of seven children.[142] Issue:

1. Juliet Gertrude Upshur, died 1933 in Florida, married Joseph McIndoe of Richmond. Issue:

   a. Louis Upshur McIndoe.

   b. Louise McIndoe.

   c. Mary Randolph McIndoe.

---

[142] Near Westover Church, Charles City County, is a farm known as "Indian Field." The farm is marked "Dr. Upshure" on an original hand-drawn Civil War map owned by Dr. Raymond H. Brockwell of Richmond. It has been erroneously claimed to be the old home of Dr. Thomas Harold Wilson Upshur. Actually, it was the home of Dr. William J. *Upshaw* (b. 1813) of Lloyds, Essex County, who married Virginia D. Wilcox (see her tombstone at Westover Church), dau. of Dr. Edward Wilcox who lived near by.

2. George Parker Upshur, killed in an accident on the Chesapeake and Ohio Railroad when he was seventeen years old.

3. Mary Ellen Upshur, born March 10, 1856, married, March 12, 1887, Irving G. Harvey of Newport News. Issue:

   a. Irving Bremond Harvey, born January 20, 1888.

   b. A male infant, born May 15, 1889, died May 18, 1889.

4. Walter Shepherd Upshur, born December 13, 1857, died August 8, 1924, at Newport News, married, first, about 1883, Lillie Lottier, died March 12, 1885, daughter of Lawrence Lottier of Richmond. Issue:

   a. Lawrence Lottier Upshur, born March 4, 1884, died February 12, 1952, married January 10, 1906, Dora Despres, born August 5, 1882. Issue:

   1. Virginia Lillie Upshur, born November 24, 1906. Unmarried.

   2. Lillian Lottier Upshur, born June 18, 1909, married, November 28, 1935, John Henry Madigan, born February 1, 1909. Issue.

      a. Sharon Anne Madigan, born January 18, 1937.

      b. Mary Susan Madigan, born May 21, 1940.

      c. John Henry Madigan, Jr., born February 3, 1946.

      d. James Patrick Madigan, born September 29, 1949.

   3. Lawrence Lottier Upshur, Jr., born April 26,

1911, married, February 2, 1946, Arlyle Mary Schmidt, born April 7, 1918. Issue:

a. John Walter Upshur, born December 14, 1946.

b. Steven Lawrence Upshur, born January 2, 1949.

c. Elaine Marie Upshur, born February 19, 1951.

4. Margaret Mary Upshur, born October 26, 1912, married, February 14, 1942, Byron Walter Spaulding, born January 28, 1901. Issue:

a. Bettina Ann Spaulding, born June 3, 1943.

b. Virginia Ann Spaulding, born August 21, 1945.

c. Byrnn Wallis Spaulding, born April 9, 1950.

5. Melville Zacharias Upshur, born October 31, 1918, married, September 25, 1943, Wanda Violet Wysocki, born August 17, 1923. Issue:

a. Thomas Melville Upshur, born November 19, 1944.

b. Nancy Elizabeth Upshur, born December 17, 1945.

c. Karen Marie Upshur, born September 23, 1952.

b. Lillie Lottier Upshur, born February 18, 1885, married Robert S. Christian. Issue:

1. Robert S. Christian, Jr.

2. Lawrence Lottier Christian.

3. Mary Christian.

After the death of his first wife, Walter Shepherd Upshur moved from Richmond to Norfolk. He married, second, April 25, 1888, Rosalie H. Selden, born March 12, 1867, died January 6, 1899, daughter of Miles Selden of Kempsville, Virginia. There was no issue by this marriage. Walter Shepherd Upshur married, third, about 1900, Bessie French, died January 25, 1945, daughter of Colonel Thomas Barton French of Newport News. Walter moved from Norfolk to Newport News where he and his third wife reared a family of five children. Issue:

c. Marie Bettina Upshur, born March 4, 1901, married, first, October 22, 1920, John Ambler Nicholas, Jr., second, September 16, 1939, Arthur Charles Rohn. Issue:

1. Walter Upshur Nicholas, born September 26, 1921.

d. Walter Shepherd Upshur, Jr., born September 3, 1902, died April 10, 1950, unmarried.

e. Frances Gretchen Upshur, born September 26, 26, 1903, married, November 21, 1924, Benjamin Franklin Carter. Issue:

1. Peyton Franklin Carter, born July 15, 1926.

2. Thomas Barton French Carter, born June 14, 1936.

f. Bessie French Upshur, born October 7, 1904, married, February 8, 1923, Randolph P. Scott. Issue:

1. Betsy Barton Scott, born February 29, 1924.

2. Mary Randolph Scott, born December 12, 1925.

3. Anne Spottswoode Scott, born March 2, 1929.

4. Graham Upshur Scott, born February 18, 1931.

g. Desiree Gaiennie Upshur, born December 6, 1905, married, December 19, 1931, William Clarence Park, died May 6, 1954. Issue:

1. William Clarence Park, Jr., born January 31, 1933.

2. Desiree Upshur Partee Park, born March 5, 1938.

5. William J. Upshur, died in infancy.

6. John Arthur Upshur, born April 24, 1861, died October 16, 1936, married, October 11, 1882, Mary Conway Cary, born November 28, 1860, died June 1, 1923. Issue:

a. Arthur Bremond Upshur, born October 11, 1883. Unmarried.

b. Harold Upshur, born February 10, 1885, died March 19, 1886.

c. Horace Upshur, born March 5, 1886, died March 1, 1941, married Frances Nottingham of Eastville, born 1885, died 1929. No issue:

d. Edgar Cary Upshur, born January 23, 1888, married Mary Carneal, born October 5, 1887. No issue.

e. Edith Upshur, born July 14, 1890. Unmarried.

f. Oscar Upshur, born July 16, 1896, died April

20, 1953, married, December 5, 1936, Volina Gray Drewry, born April 28, 1913. Issue:

1. Cary Elizabeth Upshur, born September 9, 1937.

2. Anne Drewry Upshur, born September 12, 1940.

3. Horace Neale Upshur, born March 4, 1942.

7. Louis C. Upshur married Millicent Mallet, died October 14, 1889, daughter of Captain A. B. Mallet of Newport News. No issue.

II. Juliet Upshur, eldest daughter of Littleton I and Ann (Parker) Upshur, was born in 1784 at "Vaucluse." She married (bond dated February 22, 1814) John T. Elliott, merchant of Franktown, Northampton County, born August 12, 1788, died December 30, 1825. For a time Elliott was a business partner of John Upshur of "Brownsville" from whom he bought a large tract of land in Northampton County on the bayside. The property was situated between Nassawadox Creek and Church or Broad Creek, in that area since known as Elliott's Neck. Here Elliott built "Merton" (burned about 1895)), a handsome brick house where he and Juliet lived until he died. Later, Juliet moved to Norfolk to be with her widowed sister, Elizabeth Parker (Upshur) Nottingham, and her nephew, Dr. George Littleton Upshur. Juliet died January 29, 1854, at Norfolk and was buried in Elmwood Cemetery. No issue.

III. Caleb Brown Upshur, second son of Littleton I and Ann (Parker) Upshur, was born about 1786 at "Vaucluse." He attended Princeton University, receiving his A. B. degree in 1802 and his M. A. degree in 1806. He was Clerk of the Superior Court of Northampton County

from 1813 until his death and was a member of Masonic Lodge No. 11 of Eastville. The name of Caleb's wife has not been determined nor is it known where Caleb made his home but it is believed that it was in the vicinity of Eastville. His will[143] dated June 19, 1820, mentioned two children; since his wife was not mentioned, it is believed that she died before that date. Caleb Brown Upshur died February 23, 1821, at Eastville. Issue:

A. Mary Evelina Upshur, born 1811, died May 2, 1829, at Swedensborough, New Jersey.

B. Horace Littleton Upshur, born about 1812, died about 1857. He left Virginia and went to Texas about 1840 where he practiced law and land surveying. Records show he lived in San Antonio, Rio Grande City, and Austin. Horace was favorably mentioned in *Audubon's Western Journal: 1849-1850*, by John Woodhouse Audubon, son of the famous naturalist. Horace served for a time as Land Commissioner for the Republic of Texas, and was a member of the Masonic fraternity of Austin. The name of his wife has not been determined. Issue:

1. Rosalie Maria Upshur, born August 13, 1845, at San Antonio, died 1922 at Dallas, married a Mr. Barlow and had nine children, one of whom is Horace Littleton Barlow of Hollywood, California.

IV. Arthur Brown Upshur, third son of Littleton I and Ann (Parker) Upshur, was born February 29, 1788 at "Vaucluse." He attended Yale with his younger brother, Abel Parker Upshur I, and the names of both boys appear in the register of 1805 as members of the junior class. The

---

[143] Will of Caleb Brown Upshur, Northampton Wills, Etc., 1817-22, 507.

two brothers did not finish their course at Yale but left in May 1806 and entered Princeton.

Arthur married (bond dated April 27, 1811) Elizabeth G. Carpenter, died prior to December 21, 1822, daughter of John Carpenter, died 1804, and Lucy (Gault) Carpenter of Northampton County.

During the War of 1812, Arthur served as Ensign in the Twenty-seventh Regiment of Virginia Militia, Northampton County, in the company of Captain Littleton Upshur II, his brother. He was a member of Masonic Lodge No. 11 of Eastville. Arthur died January 17, 1819,[144] and was buried at "Vaucluse." Issue:

A. John Littleton Upshur, born about 1812, died September 17, 1844, unmarried. His uncle, George Parker Upshur, in a letter dated September 30, 1844, to Judge Beverly Tucker of Williamsburg, refers to John Littleton Upshur as "a man born of high hopes and bitter disappointments," and mentions his fine education and the great loss to the community as a result of his death.

B. Littleton Dennis Upshur, born November 15, 1818, died February 19, 1862, married, November 27, 1850, Abby Francis Lovell[145] of Osterville, Massachusetts, born April 19, 1827. Littleton settled in Massachusetts where his children were born. Issue:

1. Virginia Upshur, born 1855. Unmarried.
2. Lovell Upshur, born 1857, married, October 22, 1844, Mary Eliza Chandler, descendant of Roger Chandler of the Plymouth Company. Issue:

---

[144] Will of Arthur Brown Upshur, Northampton Wills, Etc., 1817-22, 263.

[145] Dau. of George Lovell (1787-1861) and Mary (Hilliard) Lovell of Osterville, Mass., and said George was son of Cornelius Lovell (wife Anna), descendant of Robert Lovell who came to Weymouth, Mass., with the family of Rev. Joseph Hall in 1635.

a. Gertrude Upshur, born July 29, 1885.

V. Judge Abel Parker Upshur I,[146] fourth son of Littleton I and Ann (Parker) Upshur, was born June 17, 1790, at "Vaucluse." The public acts of this distinguished statesman are matters of official record although comparatively little has been published about his private life.

This illustrious ancestor married, first, February 26, 1817, Elizabeth W. Dennis,[147] born January 6, 1795, died November 28, 1817, less than one year following her marriage. Elizabeth was buried at "Vaucluse." Issue:

A. Elizabeth W. D. Upshur, born November 28, 1817, died December 8, 1817, buried in the grave with her mother.

Judge Upshur married, second, June 25, 1824, his second cousin, Elizabeth Anne Brown Upshur, born April 8, 1805, died January 17, 1874, daughter of John Brown Upshur I and Mary Elizabeth (Stith) Upshur (see Rose Cottage branch). Judge Upshur died February 28, 1844. He and his second wife were buried in Oak Hill Cemetery, Washington, D. C. Issue:

B. Susan Brown Upshur, born April 12, 1826, at "Vaucluse," died November 10, 1858, married, August 2, 1846, Captain Thomas Lee Ringgold, U. S. Army,[148]

---

[146] Appendix, Note VIII, for brief biography of Abel Parker Upshur I. The most comprehensive biography of Abel Parker Upshur was written by Claude H. Hall, U. Va. graduate student, whose master's thesis, 1949, "The Early Life of Abel Parker Upshur, 1790-1841," is considered excellent. Mr. Hall plans to write as his doctoral dissertation "The National Career of Abel Parker Upshur, 1841-44."

[147] Dau. of Hon. John Dennis (1771-1807) of "Beckford," Princess Anne, Md., Congressman from Maryland, and Elinor (Jackson) Dennis (d. 1827), dau. of Henry Jackson of Somerset County, Md., and said John Dennis was son of Littleton Dennis (1728/9-74) and Susanna (Upshur) Dennis (1733-84). See 98*n*.

[148] According to his tombstone inscription, Capt. Thomas Lee Ringgold, U. S. A. (1818-54) was born in Loudoun County, Va., son of Tench and Mary Ringgold. Thomas was descendant of Thomas Ringgold (b. 1609), immigrant to Virginia who removed to Kent County, Md., about 1650.

born June 29, 1818, died May 11, 1854. Susan and her husband were buried in Oak Hill Cemetery. Issue:

1. Susan Upshur Ringgold, born December 17, 1847, died August 17, 1853.
2. Abel Upshur Ringgold, born June 1, 1849, died August 21, 1853.
3. Mary Lee Ringgold, born April 13, 1851, died February 14, 1859.
4. James Trapier Ringgold, born 1852, died January 1898, married Isabella (Egerton) Bordley, born 1859, died 1896. Ringgold practiced law in Baltimore. No issue.

VI. Dr. John Upshur, fifth son of Littleton I and Ann (Parker) Upshur, was born in 1792 at "Vaucluse," died May 15, 1818. In the War of 1812 he served as Private in the Twenty-seventh Regiment of Virginia Militia in the company of Captain Littleton Upshur II, his brother. He lived on the Eastern Shore and practiced medicine there until his untimely death at the age of twenty-six. Dr. Upshur married, April 15, 1818, Lucy Parker,[149] his first cousin, born 1796, died April 29, 1818, just two weeks after her marriage. Dr. Upshur died eighteen days after the death of his young bride. Both were buried at "Sylvan Retreat," now known as "Bull Farm," near Pungoteague on Nandua Creek. In a family graveyard containing many tombstones of the Andrews, Parker, and related families is a white marble slab with the following inscription:

---

[149] Dau. of Col. Thomas ("Hangman Tom") Parker (1757-1819) and Elizabeth (Andrews) Parker, descendant of Lt.-Col. William Andrews who immigrated to Virginia in the *Treasurer* in 1617 and was on the E. S. Va. as early as 1623. For Parker lineage, 131*n*. For Andrews lineage, *Wm. and Mary Quar.*, 2d ser. 8(1928), 36-41; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim.*

Here repose the bodies of

Doctor John Upshur

Son of Littleton and Anne Upshur
He died on the 15th of May A.D. 1818
Aged 26 Years

And of his wife

Lucy Upshur

Daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth Parker
She died on the 29th of April A.D. 1818
Aged 22 Years

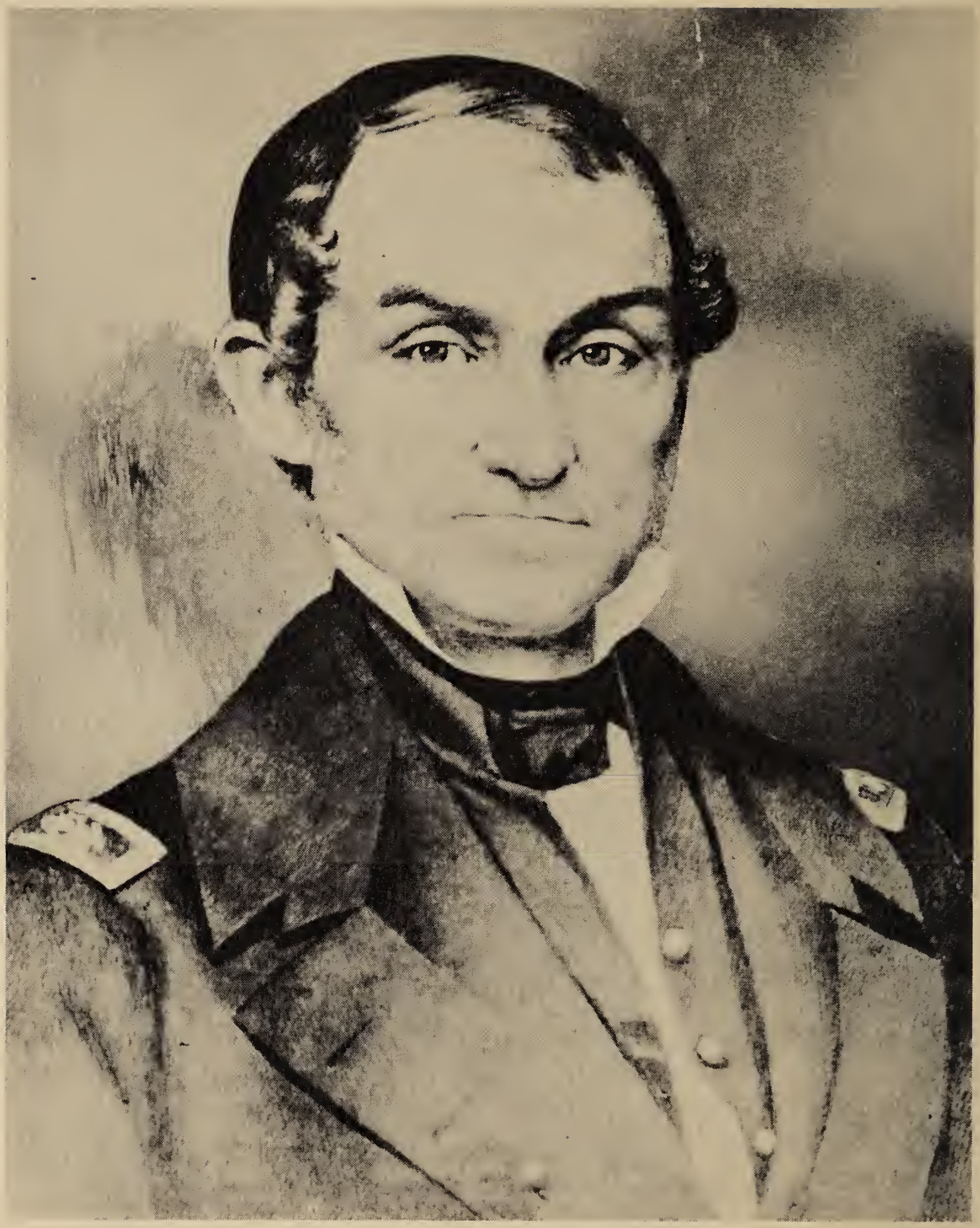
"They were lovely in their lives and in their deaths
they are not divided."

The attachment of this amiable pair commenced in their early youth, and continued with unabated tenderness for 13 years. They were united in marriage on the 15th of April 1818 on the 29th day of the same month the warm-hearted bridegroom saw himself a widower! His manly spirit, which had borne itself erect under all other calamities, bowed beneath this stroke. After an unavailing struggle of 18 days, he found his only relief from despair and a broken heart, in a voluntary death.

Reader! Waste not your moments in fruitless speculation on the manner of his death. The tears of a whole community attest his worth: the widow, the orphan, the poor, the oppressed, those whom his unbought benevolence protected and soothed shall be his intercessors before the throne of God.

Ill-fated pair! Your bridal robes are your winding sheet, your bridal couch the grave! Peace to thee, meek and gentle Spirit! Peace to thee, broken-hearted martyr of a tender Passion! In heaven your virtues are recorded and there shall you rest together in the bosom of your Saviour and your God.

VII. Leah Custis Upshur, second daughter of Littleton I and Ann (Parker) Upshur, was born about 1797 at "Vaucluse," married (bond dated July 7, 1824) Peter Poythress



Commander George Parker Upshur
(1799-1852)
Second Superintendent, United States Naval Academy

Mayo.[150] Little personal information concerning this couple has been found, although Mayo[151] is known to have been a leading citizen of Norfolk. Issue:

A. Littleton Mayo.

B. Joseph Mayo.

C. William Mayo.

D. George Mayo.

E. Anna Mayo.

F. Agnes Mayo, died 1832, buried at "Vaucluse."

VIII. Commander George Parker Upshur,[152] sixth son of Littleton I and Ann (Parker) Upshur, was born March 8, 1799, at "Vaucluse." During the War of 1812, as a boy of fourteen, he served as Private under his older brother, Captain Littleton Upshur II, in the Twenty-seventh Regiment of Virginia Militia. He entered the U. S. Navy as Midshipman in 1818, and in 1827 was promoted to Lieutenant. During 1832-34 he served on the Brazilian Station aboard the U. S. S. *Lexington* at the attack and dispersion of the pirates off the Falkland Islands.

He married (bond dated June 25, 1836) Margaret Eyre Parker,[153] his first cousin once removed, born October 13, 1814, at "Selma," near Eastville, died October 4, 1839, at Norfolk, buried at "Vaucluse." About the time of his marriage George Parker Upshur bought property near Eastville in Old Town Neck on Mattawaman Creek

---

150 See 138*n* for descent of Peter Poythress Mayo.

151 After the death of Leah Custis (Upshur) Mayo, Peter married Leah's niece, Anne Elizabeth Upshur. See 139*n* and related text.

152 The naval record of Cdr. George Parker Upshur is on file in the Navy Dept.

153 Dau. of Gen. Severn Eyre Parker and Maria Teackle (Savage) Parker (1792-1815), his first wife. Gen. Parker was son of Judge George Parker VI (1761-1826) of "Kendall Grove" and Margaret (Eyre) Parker, his first wife. For Parker lineage, 131*n*. Maria Teackle (Savage) Parker was dau. of Thomas Lyttleton Savage (1760-1813) and Mary Burton (Savage) Savage, his first wife. See 104*n* for Savage.

which he called "Caserta" after the town in Italy where he had spent many pleasant days. The small part of the house may have been built about the middle of the eighteenth century but the larger part was built by Upshur. It is said that he intended to add another wing but tragedy came and he lost interest in the property. First, death claimed an infant son, next his young and devoted wife, "Peggy," and finally his young daughter. Commander Upshur sold "Caserta" in 1847.

During 1843-44 he commanded the U. S. S. *Truxton* on her first cruise to the Mediterranean, and served in the Receiving Ship at Norfolk during 1844-47. Upshur was commissioned Commander in 1847 and in that year became Superintendent of the U. S. Naval Academy, Annapolis, the second officer to hold that office. In 1852 he took command of the U. S. S. *Levant* at Norfolk, joined the Mediterranean Squadron, and died on board while in command at Spezia, Italy. His body was placed in a metal casket, preserved in alcohol, and brought back by his faithful body servant, Burrowes, for burial at "Vaucluse" beside his wife and two children. The epitaph on his tombstone reads:

In Memory
of
George Parker Upshur[154]
A Commander in the U S Navy
Born March 8th 1799
Died May [Nov] 3rd 1852
At Spezia in Italy while commanding
the U S Ship of War Levant
A gallant officer, an unselfish friend
devoted Christian, none knew him but
to love him, none knew him but
to praise

[154] Posthumously commissioned Captain, U.S.N.

A portrait of Commander Upshur hangs in the Naval Academy Library, and a large collection of his foreign coins is on exhibit in the Academy Museum. One of the streets in the Academy grounds, "Upshur Row," was named in his honor.

George Parker and Margaret Eyre (Parker) Upshur had issue:

A. Frederick Engle Mayo Upshur, born August 26, 1837, at Norfolk, died September 12, 1837, at Norfolk, buried at "Vaucluse."

B. Peggy Eyre Parker Upshur, born September 26, 1839, died May 25, 1841, at "Cedar Grove," buried at "Vaucluse."

IX. Elizabeth Parker Upshur, youngest child of Littleton I and Ann (Parker) Upshur, was born March 11, 1801, at "Vaucluse." She married (bond dated December 30, 1820) John E. Nottingham[155] of Northampton County by whom she had two sons and a daughter. Following the death of her husband, Elizabeth had the surname of her two young sons changed in 1841 from Nottingham to Upshur by act of the Virginia Assembly. Her brothers persuaded her to do this in order to perpetuate the Upshur name which appeared to be dying out in the Vaucluse branch of the family. Elizabeth died September 15, 1879, at Norfolk, and was buried there in Elmwood Cemetery. Issue:

A. Dr. George Littleton Upshur[156] (born Nottingham) was born January 14, 1822, in Northampton County, perhaps at "Selma." He attended the College of William and Mary during 1837-40, and the University

[155] His parentage has not been determined. There were other John E. Nottinghams living in Northampton County at the same time.

[156] Tyler, *Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography*, IV, 35.

of Pennsylvania where he received a medical degree in 1843. He married (bond dated February 8, 1844) Sarah Andrews Parker,[157] born December 31, 1822, died August 20, 1910, buried in Elmwood Cemetery, Norfolk. Dr. Upshur was Resident Physician of the Naval Hospital, Portsmouth, Virginia, and attended the first cases of the yellow fever epidemic of 1855. He continued his ministrations until the last days of the epidemic when he finally succumbed to it.[158] Dr. Upshur died September 19, 1855, at Norfolk, and was buried in Elmwood Cemetery where a handsome monument was erected to his memory.

Erected by the Masonic Fraternity of the City
of Norfolk to perpetuate a remembrance of the many
virtues of their amiable and distinguished brother
past master
George L. Upshur, M.D.
who while in the philanthropic discharges of his duties
fell a victim to the devastating scourge of 1855.
Born in Northampton County, Va.
January 14 A.L. 5822 A.D. 1822
Died in Norfolk
September 19 A.L. 5855 A.D. 1855
Aged 33 years and 8 mos.

After the death of Dr. Upshur his wife and children returned to the Eastern Shore and made their home at "Elkington," near Eastville, the home of Mrs. Upshur's brother, Alfred Parker. Issue:

---

[157] Dau. of Dr. Jacob G. Parker (1782-1829) of "Park Hall," Eastville, and Ann Gertrude (Stratton) Parker (1795-1883). Dr. Parker was son of George Parker V (1735-84) by his second wife, Sarah (Andrews) Parker. For Parker lineage, 131*n*; 149*n*; 153*n*. Ann Gertrude (Stratton) Parker was dau. of John Stratton (d. 1804) and Lucy (Digges) Stratton. For Stratton lineage, Stratton, *A Book of Strattons*, I, 141-52, II, 341-57; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*. Sarah (Andrews) Parker was dau. of Jacob Andrews (d. 1770) and Margaret (Joynes) Andrews. For Andrews lineage, 149*n*.

[158] For account of Dr. Upshur's work during this epidemic, William S. Forrest, *The Great Pestilence in Virginia* (New York, 1856), 162, 235-7.

1. Jacob Parker Upshur, born and died October 9, 1844.

2. Dr. John Nottingham Upshur,[159] born February 14, 1848, at Norfolk, died December 9, 1924, at Richmond, attended Virginia Military Institute where he was an honor graduate of the class of 1864. He was wounded in the Battle of New Market when the cadets were called to face Union troops during the Civil War. Later he studied medicine at the University of Richmond and at the Medical College of Virginia where he graduated in 1868. He settled in Richmond in 1869 and became an outstanding member of the medical profession of that city. He married, first, November 19, 1873, Lucy Tucker Whittle, born June 4, 1849, died August 2, 1876, daughter of the Right Reverend Francis M. Whittle, Bishop of Virginia, and Emily Cary (Fairfax) Whittle. Issue:

   a. Dr. Francis Whittle Upshur, born December 4, 1874, at Richmond, died October 25, 1945, married, April 20, 1921, Martha Maury Robinson, born October 15, 1885, daughter of Poitiaux and Anne (Maury) Robinson of Richmond, descendant of Matthew Fontaine Maury, U. S. Navy. Dr. Upshur attended Richmond College where he graduated in 1897. After completing his internship he practiced medicine in Richmond for many years. During World War I he served in the Medical Corps, U. S. Navy, and for a few years prior to his death he was a member of the medical staff of the Eastern State Hospital, Williamsburg. No issue.

---

[159] Tyler, *Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography*, IV, 34-7; Lyon Gardiner Tyler, *Men of Mark in Virginia* (Washington, 1909), V, 432.

Dr. John Nottingham Upshur married, second, December 11, 1879, Elizabeth Spencer Peterkin, born June 17, 1848, died May 12, 1935, only child of William Spencer Peterkin of Baltimore and Emma (Meteer) Peterkin. Issue:

b. Major-General William Peterkin Upshur,[160] born October 28, 1881, at Richmond, graduated from Virginia Military Institute in 1902, studied law at the University of Virginia, and entered the U. S. Marine Corps in 1904 as Second Lieutenant. General Upshur was awarded the Congressional Medal of Honor for conspicuous gallantry in Haiti in 1914. At the time of his tragic death on July 21, 1943, in a plane crash near Sitka, Alaska, he held the rank of Major General, and was Commanding General of the Marines of the Pacific, and second ranking officer of the Marine Corps. He married, 1904, Lucy Taylor Munford of Annapolis, died April 9, 1952. General Upshur was buried in the Naval Academy Cemetery. No issue.

c. Elizabeth Nottingham Upshur, born December 6, 1883, married, December 11, 1907, George Jarvis Benson. Issue:

1. Elizabeth Peterkin Benson, born October 4, 1909, married the Reverend Raymond Brickerhoff, Rector of St. Luke's Episcopal Church, Somers, New York.

2. Frances Day Benson, born May 16, 1912.

3. John Upshur Benson, born October 26, 1915.

d. Colonel Alfred Parker Upshur, born September

---

[160] The service record of Maj.-Gen. William Peterkin Upshur is on file in the Navy Dept.

MAJOR-GENERAL WILLIAM PETERKIN UPSHUR
(1881-1943)
For conspicuous gallantry, the Congressional Medal of Honor

26, 1885, graduated from Virginia Military Institute in 1904, studied medicine and served in the Medical Corps, U. S. Army, in World Wars I and II. Colonel Upshur married, first, Amelie McAllister from whom he obtained a divorce in 1928. No issue by this marriage. Colonel Upshur married, second, December 24, 1928, Frances Moore, born March 13, 1891. Issue:

1. Frances Moore Upshur, born June 9, 1932, married, September 3, 1955, John Peter Craighead.

3. Lucy Beverly Upshur, born July 25, 1849, died October 21, 1850, at Norfolk, buried in Elmwood Cemetery.

4. Sarah Parker Upshur, born August 15, 1852, died November 17, 1919, at Norfolk, buried in Elmwood Cemetery, married, April 4, 1877, Thomas Cottingham Walston, lawyer of Accomack County, born August 30, 1847, died December 6, 1887, son of William and Anne (Bagwell) Walston. Issue:

a. Christine Newton Walston, born January 23, 1878, died May 15, 1920, married, October 31, 1900, Dr. John Michael Henderson of Williamsburg, born September 16, 1868. Issue:

1. John Walston Henderson, born August 6, 1901, married, September 27, 1930, Elizabeth Mallory Lee of Williamsburg, born August 8, 1902, descendant of the same Lee Family of Virginia of which General Robert Edward Lee was a distinguished member. No issue.

2. Marietta Claiborne Henderson, born June 8, 1903.

3. Christine Michael Henderson, born July 29, 1905.

4. Anna Parker Henderson, born September 30, 1906.

5. Judge Henry Littleton Upshur, born October 29, 1854, died November 26, 1940, buried at Christ Church, Eastville, married, November 22, 1876, Alice Yerby Ker, born August 21, 1853, died January 22, 1926, daughter of Hugh Ker of Northampton County and Ann Elizabeth (Yerby) Ker, born 1834, died 1914. Judge Upshur attended Virginia Military Institute and lived most of his life at "Elkington," near Eastville, which he inherited from his mother. Here the Judge raised fine horses and maintained a half-mile training track. Judge Upshur served in several public positions including Judge of the Juvenile and Domestic Relations Court and Justice of the Peace. Judge and Mrs. Upshur had two daughters who lived to maturity and other children who died in infancy. Issue:

   a. Gertrude Parker Upshur, born December 14, 1877, died June 28, 1911, married, November 28, 1900, James Rutherford Lumley of Baltimore, born 1873. Issue:

      1. James Rutherford Lumley, Jr., born November 6, 1901, married, April 2, 1934, Frances Holland.

   b. Elsie Yerby Upshur, born November 24, 1880, married, October 1908, Kendall Addison Jarvis of "Ingleside," Eastville, born December 2, 1879. No issue.

B. Rear-Admiral John Henry Upshur[161] (born Notting-

[161] Appendix, Note IX, for brief biography of Rear-Adm. John Henry Upshur.

ham), second son of Elizabeth Parker (Upshur) and John E. Nottingham, was born December 5, 1823, in Northampton County, perhaps at "Selma." He attended the College of William and Mary during 1837-40 with his older brother, George. In 1841 he joined the U. S. Navy which he made his career, advancing in rank from Midshipman to Rear Admiral. Prior to his retirement in 1885, he was Commander-in-Chief of the Pacific Station. Admiral Upshur died May 30, 1917, at the age of ninety-four, and was buried in Arlington National Cemetery.

Admiral Upshur married, first, 1851, Katharine Alicia Williams,[162] born 1834, died August 22, 1864, by whom he had several children. He married, second, 1868, Agnes (Maxwell) Kearney, died July 2, 1917, widow of General Philip Kearney of Mexican and Civil War fame. There were no children by this second marriage.

Admiral Upshur and Katharine Alicia (Williams) Upshur had issue:

1. Custis Parke Upshur, born August 21, 1852, died October 9, 1920, at Norfolk, buried in Arlington National Cemetery, married, December 5, 1876, Margaret Louise Trenchard, born April 1, 1858, daughter of Dr. Curtis James Trenchard (wife Marian) of Astoria, Oregon, descendant of George E. Trenchard of Salem, New York, attorney for

---

[162] Katharine Alicia Williams (1834-64) was dau. of Capt. William George Williams, U.S.A. (1801-46) of Mexican War fame and America Pinckney (Peter) Williams (1803-43), descendant of Daniel Parke Custis (1711-57) and Martha (Dandridge) Custis (1731-1802), subsequently wife of George Washington. Katharine Alicia Williams, supra, was sister of both Martha Custis (Williams) Carter (1827-99), wife of Rear-Adm. Samuel P. Carter, and Columbia Wingfield (Williams) Upshur (1828-86), wife of Abel Brown Upshur (1821-95). George Lyttleton Upshur, *As I Recall Them* (New York, 1936), 1-42; "Arlington and Mount Vernon, 1856," *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 57 (1949), 140-75.

King George II in 1740. Custis Parke Upshur attended the U. S. Naval Academy but failed to graduate. In spite of this disappointment, the Navy remained a dominant interest throughout his life. The author has never known a more gracious, gallant, and entertaining gentleman. Issue:

a. Kate Marion Upshur, born March 3, 1878, married, December 31, 1901, Dr. Alexander Gustavus Brown, Jr.,[163] of Richmond, born August 31, 1873, died September 16, 1953. Dr. Brown graduated from Randolph-Macon College in 1893 and from the Medical College of Richmond in 1898. He became an outstanding member of the medical profession of Richmond, and held offices in a number of medical and historical societies in Richmond and throughout Virginia. Issue:

1. Margaret Upshur Brown, born December 1, 1902, married, October 20, 1927, James Pleasants Massie, born 1899, died October 9, 1954, son of Colonel Eugene C. Massie of Richmond, descendant of Colonel Thomas Massie, a distinguished officer of the Revolutionary War who served on the staff of General Washington. Issue:

a. Margaret Brown Massie, born October 17, 1928.

b. James Pleasants Massie, born October 3, 1931.

c. Kate Roy Massie, born July 31, 1942.

---

[163] Dr. Alexander Gustavus Brown, Jr., was son of Rev. Alexander Gustavus and Fannie (Cooksey) Brown of Ashland, Va., and descendant of Dr. Gustavus and Frances (Fowke) Brown (1691-1744) of Port Tobacco, Charles County, Md.

2. Dr. Alexander Gustavus Brown III, born April 7, 1907, of Richmond.

b. John Parke Custis Upshur, born April 9, 1880, died 1952, married, June 27, 1915, Claire Harsha, born August 9, 1889, daughter of William Justin and Sarah (Hockenhull) Harsha. No issue.

c. Arthur Littleton Upshur, born 1883, died in infancy.

d. Gertrude Margaret Upshur, born May 16, 1887, married, September 25, 1913, Simon Willard Sperry, born November 13, 1883. Issue:

1. Simon Willard Sperry, Jr., born November 9, 1915, married, September 26, 1943, Elizabeth Jean Parlee.

2. Margaret Upshur Sperry, born November 4, 1918.

3. Richard Parke Sperry, born June 12, 1922.

e. Lawrence Lewis Upshur, born August 1, 1889, married, September 16, 1933, Ivy Ruth Hill, born March 15, 1893, daughter of Walter Augustus and Stella Lenore (Secrest) Hill. No issue.

f. Henry Curtis Upshur, born June 2, 1892, married twice, both marriages ending in divorce. By his first wife, Elinor, he had issue:

1. Elinor Upshur (surname changed following remarriage of mother).

2. John Henry Upshur (surname changed following remarriage of mother).

2. George Lyttleton Upshur,[164] born February 8, 1856, at the Washington Navy Yard, died April 24, 1938, at New York, buried in Oak Hill Cemetery, Washington. He prepared for college at St. Paul's School, Concord, New Hampshire, but instead of carrying out his plan to enter Harvard, in 1872 he joined his elder brother, Custis, in Portland, Oregon. From there young Upshur went to San Francisco and became confidential representative of the "Bonanza Kings" and enjoyed a personal acquaintance with the leading financial figures of the West. Returning to the East in 1881 he became one of the founders of the National Petroleum Exchange, and was associated with the great forces directing the destiny of the nation, financially and otherwise, throughout a long and fascinating life. He married, March 24, 1885, Minnie Milliken, born February 20, 1863, daughter of David Milliken, New York banker. No issue.

3. Kate Upshur, born March 12, 1861, married, February 6, 1883, Frank Turner Moorhead of the Vesuvious Iron Works of Pittsburg, born September 23, 1857, son of John and Anna Catherine Moorhead. Issue:

   a. Martha Custis Williams Moorhead, born Deber 11, 1883, died August 18, 1884.

   b. John Upshur Moorhead of Red Bank, New Jersey, born March 13, 1885, married Lillian Chew of Washington, D. C. Issue:

      1. Henry Custis Moorhead.

4. Gertrude Upshur, born July 23, 1862, married,

---

[164] For autobiography of George Lyttleton Upshur see his *As I Recall Them.*

August 31, 1882, Judge William Henry Hunt,[164a] of San Francisco, born November 5, 1857, at New Orleans, Governor of Puerto Rico, 1901-04, son of William Henry and Elizabeth Augusta (Ridgely) Hunt of New Orleans and Baltimore. Issue:

a. Elizabeth Ridgely Hunt, born July 22, 1883, at Fort Benton, Montana, died October 3, 1954, married, first, September 18, 1906, George W. Thompson, born April 7, 1878. Elizabeth married, second, 1913, Edward D. Tayloe of "Edgehill," Albemarle County, Virginia. Elizabeth and her first husband had issue:

   1. George W. Thompson, Jr., of Casenovia, New York, born July 12, 1907, married, 1933, Sallie Smith.

   2. Elizabeth Ridgely Thompson, born July 14, 1909, married, 1931, John S. Wise. Issue:

      a. John S. Wise, Jr., born 1933.

b. William Henry Hunt, Jr., born April 12, 1886, at Washington, D. C., Unmarried.

c. Helen Upshur Hunt, born February 28, 1889, at Helena, Montana, married Barnaby Conrad of San Francisco. Issue:

   1. William Hunt Conrad, born 1916.

   2. Barnaby Conrad, Jr., born 1921.

d. Gertrude Livingston Hunt, born November 19, 1898, married, 1920, Nelson Rulison Knox. Issue:

   1. Nelson Rulison Knox, Jr., born 1921.

[164a] For Hunt lineage, Ruth Laurence, ed., *Colonial Families in America* (New York, 1932), XI, 60-1.

2. Peter Gaillard Knox, born 1924.

5. Harrie N. Upshur, died in infancy.

6. Harrie P. Upshur, died in infancy.

C. Helen Nottingham, born about 1825, died in infancy.

CEDAR GROVE, NORTHAMPTON COUNTY
Plantation acquired by Arthur Upshur I in 1674
Ann Emmerson, wife of John Upshur II, buried here

Chapter VII

LEE'S NECK BRANCH[165]

John Upshur II

(1741-99)

JOHN UPSHUR II, second son of Abel I and Rachel (Revell) Upshur, was born September 17, 1741, at "Warwick." He was frequently referred to in the court records and in old family letters as Colonel John Upshur of Northampton County. Upon the death of his father in 1753, John II, who was then only fourteen, inherited "Cedar Grove," the 550-acre plantation near Hungars Church which his great grandfather, Arthur Upshur I, had originally acquired in 1674.

John II was married three times. He married, first, December 4, 1763, Ann Emmerson, born August 24, 1745, daughter of the Reverend Arthur Emmerson (wife Anne), died 1766, who was for many years Minister of Accomack Parish. John II and Ann had five children. Ann died November 9, 1775, and was buried at "Cedar Grove" where her tombstone is still standing.

On March 17, 1781, John II married, second, Margaret (Down-

---

[165] In 1681 Col. William Kendall I (d. 1686) of Northampton County bought 2050 acres on the seaside in the vicinity of the present town of Willis Wharf. Col. Kendall gave this land to his dau., Mary, and to her husband, Hancock Lee, son of Col. Richard Lee I who came to Virginia about 1641. The seaboard tract remained in the Lee Family until 1781, and became known as Lee's Neck. In 1782 John Upshur II obtained land about midway of this tract where he established his last home. His branch of the Upshur Family has been known for generations as the Lee's Neck branch, and has sometimes been called the Willis Wharf branch. A more appropriate designation would have been Cedar Grove branch for five generations of Upshurs, including John Upshur II and his children, lived at "Cedar Grove."

ing) Michael, widow of William Wainhouse Michael of Northampton County, died 1772, and daughter of Zerobabel Downing of the same county, died 1781. The following year, 1782, John II purchased a tract of land in Lee's Neck[166] and ultimately established his home there, but the location of his dwelling has not been determined. By his second wife he had four children. Margaret died December 9, 1789, and it is believed that shortly thereafter John II moved to Lee's Neck for in 1791 he sold "Cedar Grove" to Thomas Parramore.

John Upshur II married, third, July 23, 1794, Rosina Robins, daughter of Joshua Robins, died 1789, whose home was at "End View," near Hadlock, Northampton County. John II and Rosina (Robins) Upshur had no children. Rosina died April 13, 1796, and was buried at "End View" where the inscription on her tombstone is still legible. John Upshur II died September 5, 1799, and was buried in the Upshur burying ground at "Warwick" which at that time was in the possession of his grand niece, Ann Upshur,[167] who became the wife of John Eyre (see Upshur's Neck branch).

Will of John Upshur II[168]

In the name of God Amen, I John Upshur, Senr being weak in body but of perfect mind and memory and understanding, do make and ordain this writing to be my last will and Testament in manner following, to Wit: My Will is that all my just debts be paid, and in case my personal estate shall not be sufficient to satisfy them, that my Executor hereafter named shall have full power and Authority to sell any part of the whole of my real estate for the payment thereof, and my meaning is that my Negroes are not to comprise any part of my personal estate for the payment of said debts.

Item. I give and devise to my Son James Upshur one fifth of all my real and personal Estate during his my Said Son's Natural life, remainder to my Son in Law Edmund Bayley and his heirs in Trust, and, for the use of the first, and

---

166 See 165*n*.

167 See 117*n* and related text.

168 Will of John Upshur II, Northampton Wills, Etc., 1799-1802, 204. For inventory and appraisement of his estate, Northampton Wills and Inventories, 1825-29, 168.

every child of my said Son James, who shall survive him, and their Heirs; and in case there should be no child or children of my Son James nor descendants from any one or more of them living, at the time of my Son Jame's Death, then remainder to the heirs general of all my other Children equally to be divided among them.

Item. All the rest of my estate real and personal I bequeath to be equally divided among my other four children to wit, Elizabeth Dennis, Rachel Bayly, William M. Upshur and Sarah D. Upshur and their heirs forever.

Item. I appoint Littleton Dennis Guardian to my daughter Sarah D. Upshur, and Edmund Bayly guardian to my Son William M. Upshur with all necessary powers relating thereto.

Lastly I nominate and appoint my relation Littleton Upshur and my Son in Law Edmund Bayly Executors to this will. In Testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and Seal the 29th day of April in the year of our Lord Seventeen hundred and ninety nine.

John Upshur Senr Seal

Proved December 9, 1799.

John Upshur II and Ann (Emmerson) Upshur, his first wife, had issue: Arthur; James I; Elizabeth; Rachel Revell; Arthur.

I. Arthur Upshur, born September 28, 1764, died August 29, 1769.

II. James Upshur I was born November 10, 1766, at "Cedar Grove." He inherited land from his father in the north-eastern part of Lee's Neck. In 1811 he purchased an additional 176-acre tract in Lee's Neck called Federal Island, north of and adjacent to his inheritance. James I operated a salt works on this property and established his home here. He probably lived in an early eighteenth-century house which for generations has been called "Greenville." He died December 10, 1828.[169]

James I married twice. He married, first, May 24, 1796, Charlotte Pinckard, born 1773, died March 17, 1802, a

[169] Will of James Upshur I, Northampton Wills and Inventories, 1825-29, 684.

member of the old and respected Pinckard Family of Northumberland and Lancaster Counties, Virginia. Issue:

A. James Upshur II, born April 15, 1798, died July 11, 1829, unmarried.

B. John Pinckard Upshur, born March 7, 1800, died August 24, 1828, unmarried.

C. Charlotte Pinckard Upshur, born February 20, 1802. Unmarried. She was mentioned in her father's will dated December 7, 1828, so she was living at that time.

James Upshur I married, second, Susanna Christian Martin[170] of Snow Hill, Maryland, born March 6, 1785, died May 13, 1823. Issue:

D. Rosina Martin Upshur, born April 6, 1811, died January 17, 1877, married William Wilson Johnston, born July 31, 1797, died December 20, 1865, a prosperous merchant of Princess Anne, Maryland. Issue:

1. Ellen Rebecca Johnston married, April 16, 1856, the Honorable Dr. George Robertson Dennis[171] of Somerset County, born April 8, 1822, died August 13, 1882, U. S. Senator from Maryland. Issue:

   a. William Upshur Dennis, born February 2, 1857, died April 18, 1884, married and had issue.

   b. Rosina Upshur Dennis, born April 13, 1859,

---

[170] Susanna Christian Martin was dau. of Dr. John C. Martin of Snow Hill and Rose (Luker) Martin, dau. of Luke Luker and Susanna (Christian) Luker, dau. of Michael Christian and Rose (Powell) Christian, dau. of John Powell and Sarah (Yardley) Powell, dau. of Argoll Yardley II and Sarah (Michael) Yardley, dau. of Capt. John Michael, E. S. Va. immigrant, and Elizabeth (Thorogood) Michael, dau. of Capt. Adam Thorogood and Sarah (Offley) Thorogood. Upshur, *Sir George Yardley*, 6-9, 15-19; Harrison, *Harrison, Waples and Allied Families*, 128-138.

[171] Hon. Dr. George Robertson Dennis married, first, December 4, 1844, Louisa Ann Smith Joynes, dau. of Thomas R. Joynes of "Bowman's Folly," Accomack County. Dr. Dennis was son of John Upshur Dennis (1793-1851) and Maria Elizabeth (Robertson) Dennis (1800-37), his second wife, and said John Upshur Dennis was son of Littleton Dennis (1765-1833) and Elizabeth (Upshur) Dennis (1769-1819), dau. of John Upshur II (1741-99) of "Cedar Grove." For Dennis lineage, 98*n*.

married Frank Ake of Philadelphia and had issue.

c. George Robertson Dennis, Jr., born September 3, 1860. Unmarried.

d. Margaret Wilson Dennis, born March 1861, died April 30, 1864.

e. Emily Dennis, born March 16, 1863, died February 19, 1869.

f. James Upshur Dennis, born 1865, died January 25, 1866.

g. Ellen Rebecca Dennis married Denwood Jones of Somerset County and had issue.

h. James Dennis married.

2. Susan Upshur Johnston, born March 2, 1838, died June 10, 1838.

3. Emily Upshur Johnston, born March 30, 1839, died April 10, 1904, unmarried.

4. George Upshur Johnston, born April 13, 1841, died July 21, 1842.

5. Sarah Johnston, born December 25, 1842, died August 12, 1861, unmarried.

6. Upshur Johnston, born January 7, 1845, died March 28, 1880, unmarried.

7. Rosina Martin Johnston, born November 24, 1848, died February 17, 1849.

8. Margaret Wilson Johnston, born February 7, 1851, died September 29, 1859.

9. Hobart Johnston, born February 21, 1853, died September 1, 1865.

10. Dr. Samuel Johnston was a celebrated physician of

Baltimore. He married Banny Stewart of that city. No issue.

E. Ann Emmerson Upshur, died August 1823, a young girl.

F. Elizabeth Mary Upshur, born November 21, 1816, died October 11, 1822.

G. Dr. George Martin Upshur I of Snow Hill, born October 10, 1817, died June 27, 1877. He married twice and had issue by both wives. He married, first, October 23, 1839, Priscilla Ann Townsend of Worcester County, born October 6, 1819, died April 9, 1856. Issue:

1. Elizabeth Porter Upshur, born March 27, 1841, died November 26, 1841.

2. James Wilmer Upshur, born January 24, 1843, died October 23, 1869, unmarried. He was a lawyer.

3. Levin Upshur, born April 7, 1845, died February 18, 1885, married Catherine Agnew, born February 28, 1850, died September 28, 1890, daughter of Denwood Agnew of Snow Hill. Issue:

   a. Belle Upshur, born October 19, 1871.

   b. Elizabeth Upshur, born July 4, 1873, died 1875.

   c. James Wilmer Upshur of Baltimore, born September 3, 1875.

   d. Levin Upshur of Baltimore, born September 26, 1879.

4. George Martin Upshur II,[172] born December 14, 1847, died 1924, married, June 11, 1873, Sarah Emmaline Franklin, born 1851, died September 14,

[172] For biographical sketch of George Martin Upshur II, *Biographical Cyclopedia of Representative Men of Maryland and District of Columbia*, 270.

1903, daughter of the Honorable John R. Franklin of Worcester County. George Martin Upshur II was Delegate to the Legislature of Maryland from Worcester County, was Speaker of the House, and for several years was Police Commissioner of Baltimore. Issue:

a. Priscilla Upshur, born May 5, 1874, married Professor Harry F. Covington of Princeton University, born 1870, died 1928, son of the Honorable George W. Covington, Member of Congress gress from Snow Hill.

b. Franklin Upshur, born November 27, 1875, married Ethlyn Wilson, born 1876. Issue:

1. Ann Upshur, born 1911, married Kendall Jarvis.

c. George Martin Upshur III, born January 1878, died in childhood.

d. Emily Franklin Upshur, born April 23, 1892, married James Benton Whaley, born 1893. Issue:

1. Priscilla Upshur Whaley, born January 7, 1928, married, April 16, 1949, Charles Clinton Stieff II of Baltimore, born April 4, 1922. Issue:

a. Priscilla Claire Stieff, born 1950.

b. James Whaley Stieff, born May 5, 1952.

c. Charles Clinton Stieff III, born August 29, 1955.

5. John Upshur, born December 31, 1849, died February 3, 1871, unmarried.

6. Priscilla Ann Upshur, born February 26, 1852, died August 2, 1855.

7. Susan Upshur, born May 11, 1854, married, October 15, 1874, Robert Holloway Hooper of Baltimore, born March 31, 1850, son of James Albert Hooper, born 1816, died 1898, and Katherine (Holloway) Hooper, born 1825, died 1900. Issue:

   a. James Albert Hooper, born February 1, 1876, married, February 1900, Martha Virginia Pruett, born September 10, 1878, and had issue.

   b. Bessie Upshur Hooper, born March 27, 1877.

   c. Upshur Hooper, born November 5, 1879.

   d. Harwood Hooper, born December 23, 1880.

   e. Robert Holloway Hooper, born December 27, 1881.

   f. Katherine Hooper, born July 26, 1883.

   g. Bernard Hooper, born November 24, 1885, died October 26, 1901.

   h. William Upshur Hooper, born November 1, 1887.

   i. Rachel Hooper, born December 20, 1889.

   j. Susan Upshur Hooper, born February 6, 1891, died October 27, 1901.

   k. Helen Hooper, born March 7, 1893.

   l. Arthur Upshur Hooper, born September 8, 1895.

8. Rosina Ellen Upshur, born April 9, 1856, died August 2, 1942, married, October 5, 1881, George Bayard Pope of Baltimore, born February 9, 1858, died June 30, 1893. Issue:

   a. Bayard Pope, born July 3, 1883, died February 4, 1884.

   b. George Upshur Pope, born November 11, 1884,

died October 16, 1931, married, November 2, 1910, Mary Eleanor Riley, born January 1885, died April 1, 1937. Issue:

1. Mary Eleanor Pope, born March 22, 1912.

2. George Upshur Pope, Jr., born October 3, 1915, married, May 8, 1943, Dorothy Danforth, born December 10, 1912.

c. Regester Pope, born July 18, 1886, died October 11, 1936, married, October 5, 1918, Carra Inge, born 1896.

d. Dorothy Pope, born October 2, 1888.

Dr. George Martin Upshur I married, second, April 27, 1858, Sophie Hough Boyer, born October 10, 1825, died March 3, 1900, daughter of Dr. Francis A. and Ann (Hayward) Boyer of Snow Hill. Issue:

9. Francis Boyer Upshur, born July 26, 1860, married Margaret Henrietta Love, born April 12, 1863, daughter of Augustus Love of Baltimore, born June 10, 1819, died April 9, 1890. Issue:

a. Margaret Almira Upshur, born May 12, 1883.

10. William Johnston Upshur, born June 24, 1863, died September 28, 1876.

H. Wilmer Upshur, born October 22, 1821, died November 7, 1821.

III. Elizabeth Upshur, eldest daughter of John II and Ann (Emmerson) Upshur, was born in May 1769 at "Cedar Grove," died May 11, 1819, married, December 4, 1788, her first cousin, Littleton Dennis,[173] born July 21, 1765,

[173] He was son of Littleton Dennis (1728/9-74) and Susanna (Upshur) Dennis (1733-84). See 98*n*.

died August 16, 1833. This couple made their home at "Beverly," the old Dennis plantation on the south side of the Pocomoke River, near Pocomoke City. Both were buried there in the Dennis burying ground where several of their children and many of their kinsfolk are buried. Issue:

A. Henry Dennis, born May 29, 1791, died January 31, 1793.

B. John Upshur Dennis,[174] born April 10, 1793, died December 23, 1851, married three times and had issue.

C. Anne Emmerson Dennis, born November 17, 1795, died March 25, 1817, married, June 10, 1816, Dr. Thomas Fisher of Accomack County. No issue.

D. James Dennis, born November 4, 1798, died February 10, 1817.

E. Littleton Upshur Dennis, born January 17, 1804, died April 16, 1835, married, June 27, 1826, Sarah Anne Waters, born 1802, died July 5, 1832, and had issue.

F. Henry Teackle Dennis, born July 7, 1807, died April 29, 1819.

IV. Rachel Revell Upshur, second daughter of John II and Ann (Emmerson) Upshur, was born May 24, 1771, at "Cedar Grove," died January 8, 1816, married, September 16, 1790, Edmund Bayly,[175] born August 27, 1763, died November 18, 1805, buried at "Hills Farm," Accomack County. Issue:

---

[174] John Upshur Dennis (1793-1851) had twenty children; four by his first wife, Elizabeth (Dashiell) Upshur (d. 1820); nine by his second wife, Maria Elizabeth (Robertson) Upshur (1800-37); seven by his third wife, Louisa Jane (Holland) Upshur who survived him.

[175] Edmund Bayly (1763-1805), through his mother, Ann (Drummond) Bayly (1742/3-1801), was a descendant of both Richard Hill (d. 1694) of "Hills Farm," E. S. Va. immigrant, and John Drummond (*ca.* 1636-1713/14), E. S. Va. immigrant. See 140*n*.

A. John Hill Bayly, born February 4, 1792, died September 28, 1828, married, November 7, 1816, Margaret S. Wilson, daughter of William W. and Peggy Custis (Tompkins) Wilson of "Bush Hill," Northampton County, and had issue.

B. Thomas Upshur Bayly, born February 9, 1794, died September 12, 1796.

C. James Upshur Bayly,[176] born January 1, 1796, died October 1, 1821, married Esther Parramore and had issue.

D. Anne Upshur Bayly, born December 5, 1799, married, October 10, 1826, William Digby Seymour,[177] born September 1800, son of the Reverend William Seymour of "Wesley" near Onancock, born October 1, 1773, died 1821, and had issue.

E. Elizabeth Upshur Bayly, born September 25, 1802, married the Reverend Richard Roche.

V. Arthur Upshur was the second son of John II and Ann (Emmerson) Upshur to be given the name of Arthur. The dates of his birth and death have not been found, but he was living in 1781 for he was mentioned by name in the will of his uncle, Arthur Upshur IV, viz., ". . . to my Nephew Arthur Upshur, son of my brother John, Three hundred and Seventy Acres . . . called the Quarter plantation . . . purchased of Col. Garland . . ." Arthur probably died before 1799 for he was not mentioned in his father's will of that date.

John Upshur II and his second wife, Margaret (Downing) Michael-Upshur, had issue: William Michael; Sarah D.; unnamed child; Susanna.

---

[176] See 140*n*.

[177] Upshur, *Sir George Yardley*, 25-6.

VI. William Michael Upshur, born July 20, 1782, probably at "Cedar Grove," died about 1824, married, September 2, 1805, Elizabeth White,[178] died 1825, daughter of Joseph White of Northampton County, died 1813. William Michael Upshur served as Corporal in the Twenty-seventh Regiment of Virginia Militia in the War of 1812. Issue:

A. Elizabeth Upshur.

B. Sally Downing Upshur, born about 1807, died 1888, unmarried.

C. Margaret Michael Upshur married, December 19, 1837, William J. Nottingham of Northampton County. Issue:

1. Richard Volney Nottingham.
2. William Upshur Nottingham.
3. Sarah Nottingham.
4. George Upshur Nottingham.

D. Mary W. Upshur married, September 12, 1836, Dr. James Michael Savage. Issue:

1. Mary Bayly Savage, died young, unmarried.
2. Bettie Savage married Dr. Esler Kellam and had issue.

E. Rachel Upshur, died unmarried.

F. (William) Arthur Downing Upshur of Northampton County, graduate of the University of Virginia, married Lucretia Ann Major. Issue:

1. William Major Upshur[179] of Northampton County,

---

[178] Will of Elizabeth (White) Upshur, Northampton Wills and Inventories, 1825-29, 137.

[179] For biography of William Major Upshur and brief sketch of the Upshur Family, B. F. Johnson, *Makers of America* (Washington, D. C., 1915), I, 578-82.

born December 19, 1861, died June 4, 1927, married, October 26, 1892, Caroline Susan Crowder of Mecklenburg County, born July 15, 1872, died May 1945, daughter of the Reverend William Robert Crowder, born 1847, died 1917, and Victoria Adelaide (Moore) Crowder, born 1841, died 1917. Issue:

a. William Major Upshur, Jr., born September 11, 1893, married, June 5, 1915, Lucile Snow, born January 17, 1892. Issue:

1. Caroline Crowder Upshur, born June 10, 1917, married, November 21, 1940, Herbert Fletcher Green of Amelia, Virginia, died July 1943. Caroline married, second, April 1950, Haskell Brooks London.

2. Jean Snow Upshur, born August 5, 1919, married, March 31, 1943, Jacob Lee Johnson. Issue:

a. Jean Upshur Johnson, born September 13, 1946.

b. Jacob Lee Johnson, Jr., born May 26, 1951.

3. Martha Anne Upshur, born August 15, 1923.

4. Lucille Derby Upshur, born July 21, 1925, married, June 23, 1951, John Alfred Mapp.

b. Florence Adelaide Upshur, born December 10, 1894, married, August 6, 1918, William John Scott, born September 25, 1894. Issue:

1. William John Scott, Jr., born May 15, 1919, married, December 29, 1942, Roberta Constance Billups, born December 1, 1920. Issue:

a. Margaret Anne Scott, born November 26, 1943.

b. William John Scott III, born July 31, 1946.

2. Marion Upshur Scott, born February 19, 1921, married, October 11, 1952, Florence Ann Kerrigan, born August 26, 1924. Issue:

a. James Upshur Scott, born December 17, 1954.

c. Caroline Crowder Upshur, born March 20, 1897, died July 20, 1897.

d. Giles Crowder Upshur, born April 12, 1898, married, December 17, 1919, Jewel Whitaker Mears of Northampton County, born November 6, 1898, daughter of Otho Frederick and Florence Rowena (Holland) Mears. Issue:

1. Otho Mears Upshur, born September 15, 1920.

2. Giles Crowder Upshur, Jr., born March 12, 1924, married, March 1951, Jane Harrison Copland, born July 23, 1928, daughter of Alfred G. and Mary (Ruffin) Copland of Charles City County. Issue:

a. Cary Harrison Upshur, born December 15, 1952.

b. Susan Ruffin Upshur, born February 18, 1954.

3. Florence Holland Upshur, born September 15, 1926, married, June 22, 1949, Arthur Wainhouse Downing Mears, born September 10, 1924, son of Dr. and Mrs. Burleigh N. Mears of Belle Haven. Issue:

a. Corinne Holland Mears, born August 14, 1950.

b. Arthur Wainhouse Downing Mears, Jr., born May 19, 1953.

4. Jewel Whitaker Upshur, born September 4, 1932, married, December 27, 1954, Norman Trow Beach of Warrenton, Virginia.

e. Margaret Costin Upshur, born December 1, 1899, married, February 28, 1922, Edward Magruder Tutwiler Addison, born June 25, 1895. They live at "Park Hall," Eastville. Issue:

1. Margaret Tutwiler Addison, born February 13, 1926, married, September 6, 1946, John Page Robbins of Northampton County, born February 28, 1924. Issue:

a. John Page Robbins, Jr., born June 4, 1948.

b. Edward Magruder Addison Robbins, born November 14, 1949.

c. Floyd Upshur Robbins, born February 27, 1951.

d. Margaret Addison Robbins, born August 2, 1952.

2. Edward Magruder Tutwiler Addison, Jr., born May 10, 1929.

f. Lysander Royster Upshur, born June 11, 1902, married, February 6, 1926, Charlotte Brittingham, born October 17, 1903. Issue:

1. Lysander Royster Upshur, Jr., born July 5, 1927, married, January 16, 1954, Mary Ann Kraft, born November 28, 1932.

2. Charlotte Woodley Upshur, born January 5, 1930, married Jack Fisher Melson, born February 28, 1920. Issue:

a. Jack Fisher Melson, Jr., born November 9, 1950.

b. Larry Upshur Melson, born February 26, 1952.

g. Lucretia Anne Upshur, born March 17, 1904, married, September 1930, William Cooper Taylor of Plainfield, New Jersey, now a Captain in in the Navy, born November 22, 1904. Issue:

1. Anne Upshur Taylor, born January 16, 1932, married June 14, 1955, David Wilkinson Evans.

h. Arthur Downing Upshur, born April 12, 1905, died 1934.

i. Caroline Crowder Upshur, born August 17, 1912, died August 30, 1912.

2. Elizabeth Mary Upshur, died unmarried.

VII. Sarah D. Upshur, born March 5, 1784, married Richard D. Bayly,[180] died 1828, younger brother of Edmund Bayly who married Sarah's older sister, Rachel Upshur. Issue:

A. Catharine K. Bayly married John T. R. Joynes of Accomack County. She divorced Joynes in 1849 and resumed her maiden name. Catharine died in 1867.

B. Sarah Upshur Bayly,[181] born November 24, 1808, died June 25, 1869, married, October 8, 1826, Nathaniel

---

[180] Brother of Edmund Bayly (1763-1805) of "Hills Farm." See 175*n*; 140*n*.

[181] For her descendants, Upshur, *Sir George Yardley*, 14, 15.

James Winder[182] of Northampton County, born December 6, 1794, died August 2, 1844. Winder was a lawyer and served for many years as Clerk of the Superior and Inferior Courts of Northampton County. This couple were buried in the graveyard at Christ Church, Eastville. Issue:

1. Dr. Richard Bayly Winder, Major in the Confederate Army and afterwards Dean of the College of Dental Surgery, Baltimore. He married three times and had issue by his second wife, Sarah M. (Custis) Winder.
2. Sarah Caroline Winder, born December 26, 1830, died September 24, 1910, married Dr. George Ker of "Cessford," Eastville, born March 20, 1825, died August 22, 1892, and had issue.
3. Mary Catherine Winder married Major Charles Howard of Baltimore whose mother was the daughter of Francis Scott Key, author of "The Star Spangled Banner." This couple had issue.
4. William N. J. Winder, born March 10, 1836, died April 30, 1864, buried in the graveyard at Christ Church, Eastville.

VIII. A child, born March 9, 1786, died in infancy.

IX. Susanna Upshur, died in infancy.

---

[182] For Winder lineage, *ibid.*, 10-15.

Chapter VIII

ROSE COTTAGE BRANCH

Caleb Upshur

(1744-78)

CALEB UPSHUR, third and youngest son of Abel I and Rachel (Revell) Upshur, was born in 1744 at "Warwick." Caleb's mother died when he was five years old and upon the death of his father in 1753 he was left an orphan at the age of nine. Caleb and his brother, John II, were placed under the guardianship of their older brother, Arthur IV. By the will of his father, Caleb was left an 800-acre plantation in Bradford's Neck, near Locustville, Accomack County. The old house on this plantation has been known for generations as "Rose Cottage."[183]

About 1770 Caleb married Anne Brown whose parentage has not been determined, and it was probably about that time that he established his home at "Rose Cottage," about seven miles to the north of "Warwick."

Neither tradition nor the Accomack County records furnish much information about Caleb Upshur. Thomas Teackle Upshur II talked with Caleb's grandchildren who reported their grandfather's reputation as that of a quiet, reserved, and highly respected gentleman whose name was honored by all who knew him. This brief description does not tell much about Caleb, but the fact that his nephew, Littleton Upshur I of "Vaucluse,"

---

[183] For description of "Rose Cottage," Appendix, Note X.

BEFORE RESTORATION

AFTER RESTORATION

ROSE COTTAGE, ACCOMACK COUNTY
An eighteenth-century Upshur home

named his second son in compliment to his uncle indicates that Caleb must have been greatly admired and beloved by that kinsman who was one of the most prominent men of his time on the Eastern Shore.

Caleb Upshur may have been quiet and reserved, but those retiring qualities did not prevent his taking positive action to protect his property when he felt the occasion demanded. An entry dated 1774 in the records of the Virginia House of Burgesses reads:[184]

> A Petition of several Persons of the County of Accomack, whose names are thereunto subscribed, was presented to the House, and read; setting forth that the Petitioners and their forefathers, who inhabited the lands lying back from Navigable Water, near Wachapreague Creek, have until very lately, been allowed the privilege of a way over a corner of Land now belonging to Caleb Upshur, to a landing on the said Creek, for taking and bringing away Fish and Oysters, which way being but short along a Bank, and nearly on the line of the said Land, did not interfere with the Owner's enclosures, and was not otherwise considered detrimental to him; but that the said Upshur hath now forbidden the Petitioners from frequenting that Landing, at their Peril, whereby they are in great measure deprived of a comfortable supply of Food; and therefore praying the consideration of the House and such Relief as shall seem Just.

At a meeting of the First Continental Congress in Philadelphia on September 5, 1774, a stringent Continental Association was formed forbidding the colonies to import British goods after December 1, 1774, or to export American goods after September 10, 1775. Congress directed the appointment of Committees of Safety in each town and county with inquisitorial and punitive powers to carry out these provisions. These county committees, consisting for the most part of prominent and trusted patriots, were chosen by the freeholders at the court houses in the same manner that burgesses were elected. Both Caleb Upshur and his eldest brother, Arthur Upshur IV, were chosen members of the Accomack County Committee of Safety on December 23, 1774.[185]

---

184 *Virginia Journal of the House of Burgesses 1773-1776*, 129.

185 Force, *American Archives*, 4th ser., I, 1059; 110*n* and related text.

Caleb's life was a short one for he died in his thirty-fourth year. He had spent his youth at "Warwick," and there he was buried in the family burying ground with his parents and grandparents. His tombstone may still be seen there bearing the simple epitaph:

In
Memory of
Caleb Upshur
who died October the 17th
1778
In the 34th Year of his
Age

Caleb died intestate. An inventory and appraisement of his estate was taken on December 15, 1778, by order of the Accomack County Court, and his estate was valued in excess of 6780 pounds, a sizeable amount for that period.[186]

The date and place of burial of Caleb's wife, Anne (Brown) Upshur is unknown. Thomas Teackle Upshur II, genealogist, claimed that Anne married, second, Edmund Read of Drummondtown (now Accomac), born about 1758, died December 25, 1836, and bore Read two daughters, Nancy and Mary. The author has been unable to verify this marriage.

Caleb and Anne (Brown) Upshur had issue: Sally; Leah; Elizabeth Brown; John Brown I.

I. Sally Upshur. No information has been found concerning this ancestor.

II. Leah Upshur was born in 1773 at "Rose Cottage," died

---

[186] For inventory and appraisement of the estate of Caleb Upshur, Accomack Wills, Etc., 1780-84, 495. Although this was a sizeable estate, it was small in comparison with the estates left by Littleton Upshur I of "Vaucluse" and John Upshur II of "Cedar Grove" (Northampton Wills and Inventories, 1825-29, 137, 168). In this connection it should be mentioned that early Upshur wills and inventories show that considerable property, both real and personal, was passed on to descendants. Little of this property now remains in the Upshur Family, therefore it is urged that heirlooms and memorabilia still possessed by Upshur descendants be cherished and retained, and that family papers or copies thereof be deposited in appropriate libraries for preservation.

September 21, 1847, married, January 10, 1793, John Custis Smith[187] of the Eastern Shore of Virginia, born September 16, 1762, died December 10, 1824. After the birth of their fourth child they left the Eastern Shore and moved to Suffolk, Virginia, where they purchased a large tract of several thousand acres extending from the present North Carolina highway to Lake Kilby, known as Smith's Mill Pond when John Smith owned it. Near the lake John and Leah built a beautiful home which was burned in 1860. They were buried in an old family burying ground nearby where many of their children and other members of the family were buried. Issue:

A. Susan Custis Smith, born December 21, 1793, died February 7, 1856, buried at Lake Kilby. Susan never married.

B. John Upshur Smith, born October 13, 1795.

C. Caleb Robinson Smith, born October 19, 1797.

D. Eliza Robinson Smith, born November 20, 1799, died June 12, 1847, buried at Lake Kilby, married K. Hill, and had issue.

E. Anne Upshur Smith, born 1803, died June 2, 1879, married, 1825, Thomas Jefferson Kilby, born April 2, 1803, died June 21, 1881, and had issue. Both were buried at Lake Kilby.

F. John Custis Smith, born 1804, died September 26, 1826, buried at Lake Kilby.

G. Mary Louisa Smith, born October 15, 1808, died May 22, 1837, married Wiley Parker, Jr., born March 12, 1806, died April 21, 1859, and had issue. Both were buried at Lake Kilby.

---

[187] John Custis Smith (1762-1824) was son of John Smith (1722-79) and Susanna (Custis) Smith (1728-85), dau. of Maj. John Custis (*ca.* 1701-1732/3) of "Deep Creek" and Ann (Upshur) Custis. See 90*n* and related text.

H. George Robinson Smith, born September 7, 1815, died July 3, 1872, married Judith Elizabeth Kilby of Suffolk, daughter of Turpin and Martha (Glazebrook) Kilby. This couple had eight children and left many descendants among whom is Telza (Smith) Miller of Suffolk who furnished much of this information about the descendants of Leah Upshur.

III. Elizabeth Brown Upshur was born December 28, 1775, at "Rose Cottage." She married, October 24, 1798, John Upshur of "Brownsville." This couple had four children who are described in the Brownsville branch of this genealogy. Elizabeth died April 21, 1804, and was buried in the family burying ground at "Brownsville."

IV. John Brown Upshur I, only son of Caleb and Anne (Brown) Upshur, was born about 1776 at "Rose Cottage." John's father died intestate in 1778, and Rose Cottage plantation descended to him as son and heir as shown by the following court proceedings:

John Brown Upshur—Infant orphan of Caleb Upshur, deceased, by John Upshur, his next friend.

vs.—Ejectment Proceedings.

Wm Stockley.

That the aforesaid Caleb Upshur in his lifetime was seized and in quiet possession of a plantation in Bradford's Neck in the County aforesaid, and died thereof possessed, and the said land descended to the said John Brown Upshur, his son and heir. March 29, 1780.[188]

Edmund Read of Accomack was appointed guardian[189] to young Upshur so he may have been reared by Read. As previously

---

[188] Nottingham, *Land Causes Accomack County, Virginia, 1727-1826*, 129.

[189] Accomack Fiduciary Book, 1786-87, entries of Oct. 20, 1781, and March 7, 1782, show Edmund Read as guardian to John Brown Upshur I, orphan. See also Accomack Orphans' Bonds, 1787-1891, 163.

mentioned, Thomas Teackle Upshur II wrote that John's mother married, second, Edmund Read but the author has been unable to verify this marriage and is inclined to believe that John's mother died shortly after his birth. Perhaps John and his three young sisters were taken to "Warwick" to be reared by relatives, Abel Upshur II and Elizabeth (Gore) Upshur, who were then living at the old Upshur home plantation.

John Brown Upshur I married (bond dated May 11, 1802) Mary ("Molly") Elizabeth Stith,[190] born September 7, 1786, daughter of William and Sarah (Smith) Stith of Northampton County. John and Mary Elizabeth established their home at "Rose Cottage" where they reared a family of nine children.

During the War of 1812 John Brown Upshur I served in Captain John Finney's Troop of Cavalry in the Second Regiment of Virginia Militia, Accomack County.[191]

John Brown Upshur I died intestate[192] in October 1822, and Rose Cottage plantation was divided among his wife and children. John was probably buried at "Rose Cottage" although his tombstone has not been found there. John's wife survived him by many years. She and her eldest son, William Stith Upshur, joined in selling "Rose Cottage" in 1842, and about that time moved to Northampton County and established their home near Eastville. Mary Elizabeth (Stith) Upshur died in 1851[193] and was buried at "Vaucluse." The inscription on her tombstone reads:

---

190 For lineage of Mary Elizabeth (Stith) Upshur (1786-1851), Appendix, Note XI.

191 See *Muster Rolls of the Virginia Militia in the War of 1812* (Richmond, 1852), 321.

192 For letters of administration granted to Severn Eyre Parker on the estate of John Brown Upshur I, Accomack Orders, 1822-24, 85, court of October 28, 1822. For inventory and account of sale of the estate of John Brown Upshur I, Accomack Wills, Etc., 1823-24, 159, 163.

193 For will of Mary Elizabeth (Stith) Upshur, Northampton Wills and Inventories, 1831-1901, 87.

In Memory of
Mary Elizabeth
Wife of
John Brown Upshur
and daughter of
William and Sarah Stith
Born the 7th of September 1786
Died the 2nd of July 1851
In the
65th year of her age

John Brown Upshur I and Mary Elizabeth (Stith) Upshur had issue:

A. William Stith Upshur was born April 25, 1803, at "Rose Cottage." In 1824 he was licensed to practice law, began his legal profession in Accomack County, and soon acquired the reputation of a very capable lawyer. He married, June 6, 1827, Anne Strange Wilson, daughter of Thomas Wilson of Richmond (lineage not traced). This couple settled in Accomack County, and perhaps made their home at "Rose Cottage." Anne Strange (Wilson) Upshur died in the 1830's, leaving several small children. In 1842 William Stith Upshur and his mother joined in selling "Rose Cottage" and about that time moved to Northampton County and established their home about three miles from Eastville, just below Shadyside on the western side of the bayside road. Later, William moved to Norfolk where he practiced law until his death in 1868. He was buried in Elmwood Cemetery, Norfolk, and his epitaph reads:

Our Dear Father
William Stith Upshur
Born in Northampton [Accomack] Co Va
April 25, 1803
Died at Norfolk, Va
Sept 19, 1868
"An honest man's the
Noblest work of God"

William Stith and Anne Strange (Wilson) Upshur had issue:

1. Mary Jane Stith Upshur,[194] born April 7, 1828, at "Rose Cottage," died July 27, 1907, at Monticello, New York. She was a well-known author and wrote for many southern publications under the pen name of "Fanny Fielding." She lived in Norfolk with her father for a number of years, and following his death went to New York. There she met and married, July 2, 1870, Josiah Robert Sturges, born December 4, 1807, died 1876, descendant of the Sturges Family[195] of Fairfield County, Connecticut. Josiah Robert Sturges once owned that tract of land now known as Rock Creek Park, Washington, D. C. Issue:

   a. Mary Upshur Sturges, born July 1, 1871, living 1955, married, 1894, Alois von Isakovics,[196] born June 21, 1870, at Prague, Austria, died June 6, 1917, son of a prominent Austrian family, immigrated to New York in 1886 and founded the Synfleur Scientific Laboratories, Inc., of Monticello where Mary and Alois made their home. Issue:

      I. Marie Aloisia von Isakovics, born January 12, 1898, married, January 21, 1921, Luis de Hoyos,[197] born July 21, 1892, at Santander, Spain, died May 8, 1851, immigrated to New York in 1908, established his home in Monticello where he was Mayor for sixteen years. Issue:

         a. Luis Warren de Hoyos, born 1921, married,

---

[194] For article about Mary Jane Stith Upshur, Mary T. Tardy (pseud., Ida Raymond), *Southland Writers* (Phila., 1870), II, 799-805; *Appleton's Cyclopedia of American Biography* (New York, 1889), VI, 214.

[195] For Sturges Family, Elizabeth Hubbell Schenck, *History of Fairfield, Fairfield County, Connecticut* (New York, 1889), I, 412-13, II, 461.

[196] For biographical sketch of Alois von Isakovics, James Sullivan, ed., *History of New York State, 1523-1927* (New York and Chicago, 1927), VI, 129-30.

[197] For biographical sketch of Luis de Hoyos, *ibid.*, VI, 129-30.

October 12, 1951, Marean Moore Kinnie. Issue:

(1). Debora de Hoyos, born August 10, 1953.

b. Rose Marie de Hoyos, born 1925.

2. Paul von Isakovics, died in infancy.

3. Alois von Isakovics, Jr., died February 24, 1947, at Monticello, married Betty George of Dayton, Ohio. Issue:

a. Anne von Isakovics, born 1940.

b. Alois von Isakovics III, born March 9, 1942.

c. John von Isakovics, born March 26, 1943.

4. Rosa Ann von Isakovics, born at Monticello, married, September 29, 1940, Martin O'Carroll. Issue:

a. Linda Susan O'Carroll, born October 2, 1941.

5. Johannah von Isakovics, born at Monticello, married, June 11, 1938, Dr. Sidney C. Austin.

2. Catherine Bullock Upshur, born at "Rose Cottage," died at the age of eighteen.

3. John Brown Upshur II, eldest son of William Stith and Anne Strange (Wilson) Upshur, born in 1830 at "Rose Cottage," died April 28, 1874, married Anne M. Andrews, daughter of a Dr. Andrews of New Orleans. Anne came to Norfolk during the yellow fever epidemic of 1855, and it was at that time that she and John met and were married; their marriage was not successful and they soon separated. John was a lawyer, a charter member of the Knights of Pythias, and served gallantly in the Confederate Army. Issue:

a. A son whose name is unknown to the author.

4. Thomas Wilson Upshur, second son of William Stith and

Anne Strange (Wilson) Upshur, was born about 1831 at "Rose Cottage." He was listed as a student at the College of William and Mary during 1846-47, although it is possible that the name may refer to his distant cousin, Dr. Thomas Harold Wilson Upshur of the Vaucluse branch who was about the same age. Like his father and elder brother, Thomas studied law which he first practiced in Norfolk. After the Civil War he moved to Richmond and became a member of the firm of "Wise and Upshur," the other members being the Honorable Henry A. Wise and the Honorable George Douglas Wise of Richmond. Thomas married, first, Mary Elizabeth Upshur, his first cousin, daughter of John D. and Elizabeth Ann (Faulcon)[198] Upshur. Thomas married, second, Mary Ellen (Dunton) Peed, widow of William J. F. Peed and daughter of George W. and Arnithia Dunton of Church Neck, Northampton County. Thomas died in Church Neck at the home of his stepchildren. He had no issue by either marriage.

5. Harriet Saltonstall Upshur, born at "Rose Cottage," died in infancy.

6. William Stith Upshur, born at "Rose Cottage," died in infancy.

7. Charles Wingfield Upshur, born at "Rose Cottage," died in infancy.

B. Elizabeth Anne Brown Upshur, eldest daughter of John Brown I and Mary Elizabeth (Stith) Upshur was born April 8, 1805, at "Rose Cottage," died January 17, 1874, married, June 23, 1824, her second cousin, Judge Abel

---

[198] Elizabeth Ann Faulcon was dau. of John Faulcon of "Melville," Surry County, and Mary Kennon (Cocke) Faulcon (b. 1783), dau. of John Hartwell Cocke (b. 1755) and Elizabeth (Kennon) Cocke (b. 1775). See *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 5(1898), 76-7.

Parker Upshur I, born June 17, 1790, died February 28, 1844, and had issue (see Vaucluse branch).

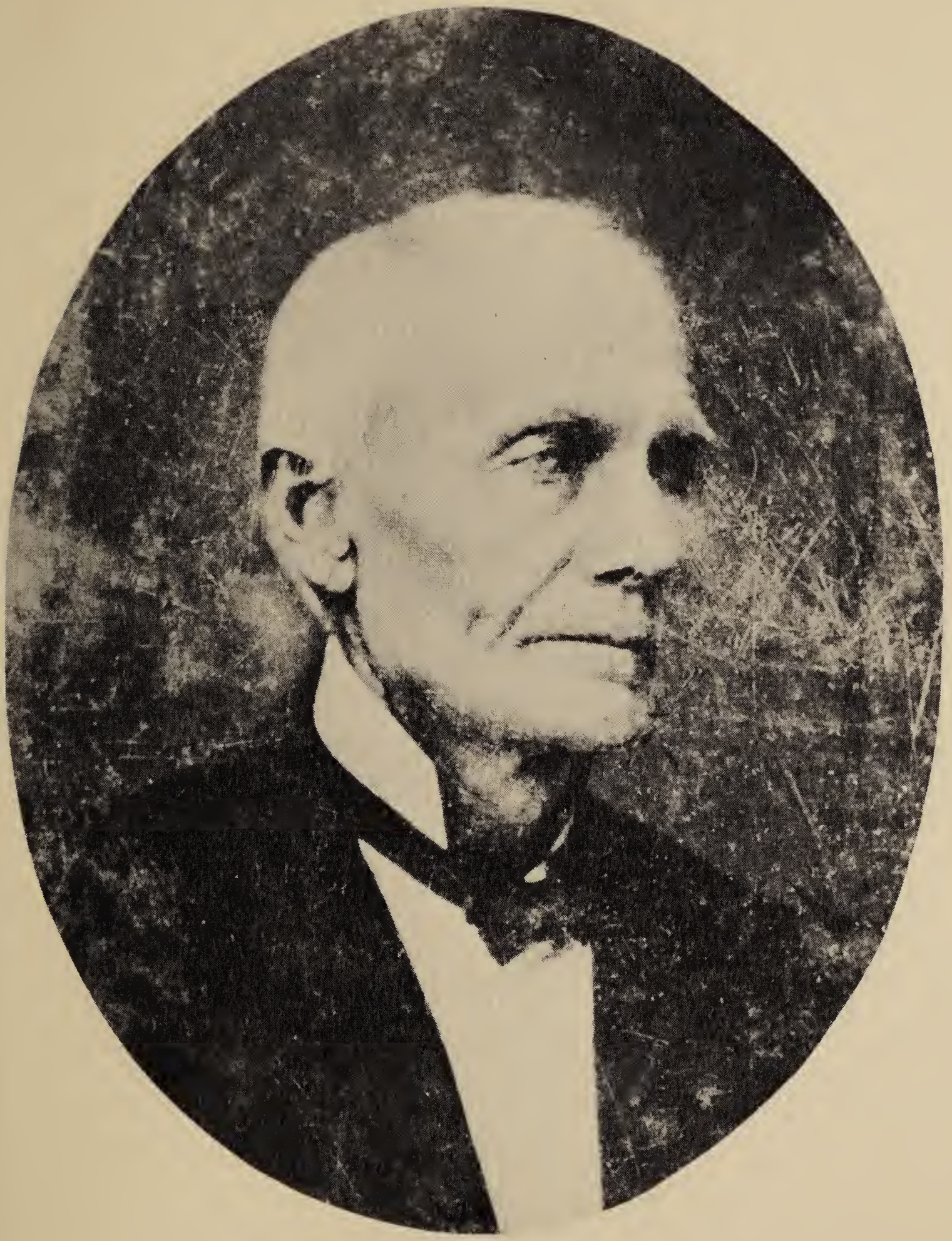
C. Captain Caleb Littleton Upshur I, second son of John Brown I and Mary Elizabeth (Stith) Upshur, was born in June 1807 at "Rose Cottage." It may have been this Caleb who, as a boy, carved his name on one of the bricks which was discovered at "Rose Cottage" by the author during his visit there in 1936.[199] When Caleb was fifteen, his father died intestate and Rose Cottage plantation was divided by law among his wife and children. Twelve years later, in 1834, Caleb deeded his part to his elder brother, William Stith Upshur.[200] Little is known about Caleb's youth except that he went to sea at an early age, perhaps following his father's death in 1822. He had an adventurous life and in more than fifty years at sea his experiences were many and varied. He was shipwrecked seven times, and on three occasions barely escaped drowning; once he and a seaman were the only survivors, rescued after clinging for many hours to a floating spar. On one voyage Caleb's ship was badly damaged when it struck a great whale, but succeeded in reaching St. Thomas in the Virgin Islands for repairs. He sailed around Cape Horn to the Lobos Islands off the coast of Peru, bringing back guano for his son, Caleb II, pioneer of the fertilizer business in Norfolk. Captain Upshur sailed around the world and during the Civil War ran the blockade in Hampton Roads for the Confederacy.

Captain Upshur often sailed up the Nansemond River, a tributary of Hampton Roads, and frequently stopped at "Pembroke" to dine. "Pembroke," located on the eastern bank of the Nansemond River, was built in the early 1700's. It became the home of James Hunter Godwin in 1830, and

---

199 Appendix, Note X.

200 Deed to part of Rose Cottage plantation, Caleb Littleton Upshur I to William Stith Upshur, Accomack Deeds, 1834-35, 334.



Captain Caleb Littleton Upshur I
(1807-85)
He sailed the Seven Seas

he left it to his daughter, Agnes Godwin, who married Jeremiah Pinner. Jeremiah's sister, Ann Elizabeth Pinner also lived there. On one of his visits to "Pembroke" Captain Upshur met Ann Elizabeth Pinner,[201] born June 9, 1813, and on April 22, 1835, she became his wife. Immediately following their marriage they made their home at "Pembroke," next they moved to Northampton County, but later returned to Nansemond County, establishing their home, so it has been reported, at "Aspen Grove" which the author has been unable to locate. Captain Upshur and his first wife had seven children. Ann Elizabeth died December 31, 1854, and was buried at St. John's Episcopal Church, Chuckatuck, Virginia, beside her three elder children.

In December 1855, Captain Upshur married, second, Martha Jane Simmons,[202] born June 7, 1826, by whom he had three children. At the time of her marriage Martha Jane was living with her parents at their plantation on Tanner's Creek, a few miles from Norfolk. Tanner's Creek is now Lafayette River, and the plantation has become that residential section of Norfolk known as Algonquin Park. The old home still stands as a beautiful landmark of earlier days. Captain Upshur died September 28, 1885, at Norfolk, in his seventy-eighth year and was buried in Elmwood Cemetery, beside his son, Hampden Stith Upshur. No tombstone marks his grave. Martha Jane died February 27, 1899, at Norfolk, and was buried in Elmwood Cemetery in a section with other members of the Simmons Family.

---

201 Ann Elizabeth Pinner (1813-1854) was dau. of Jeremiah Pinner of Nansemond County and Ann (Stoakley) Godwin-Pinner (1782-1848). Ann Stoakley may have been a member of the Stockley Family from the Eastern Shore. She was the widow of James Edwin Godwin when she married Pinner.

202 Descent of Martha Jane Simmons: John Simmons (b. 1751) m., 1773, Amey Dawley, had Dennis Simmons (1783-1870) of Knott's Island, N. C., and Norfolk County, Va., m. Judith Hanes (1787-1865), had Martha Jane Simmons (1826-99) m. Capt. Caleb Littleton Upshur I (1807-85).

Captain Caleb Littleton Upshur I and Ann Elizabeth (Pinner) Upshur, his first wife, had issue:

1. Mary Paulina Upshur, born May 21, 1836, died August 19, 1850, buried at St. John's Church, Chuckatuck.
2. Anna Stoakley Upshur, born February 10, 1838, died September 13, 1841, buried at St. John's Church, Chuckatuck.
3. John Drury Stith Upshur, born December 24, 1839, died October 8, 1841, buried at St. John's Church, Chuckatuck.
4. Caleb Littleton Upshur II, born September 11, 1841, on the Eastern Shore, was the eldest son of his parents to live to maturity. His youth and early manhood were spent mainly in Nansemond County where he acquired the nickname of "Toney," a name which he retained throughout his life. During the Civil War Caleb II served as Captain in the Confederate Army. Following the war he married, about 1868, Anna Greene Riddick,[203] born 1842, died April 1, 1914, buried in Elmwood Cemetery. Anna inherited a sizeable fortune from her father and she and Caleb II bought the old Corbell Farm, near Chuckatuck, which they developed into a beautiful and productive property. They established another residence in Norfolk where Caleb organized the Upshur Guano Company, and constructed at Bain's Wharf, Portsmouth, the first fertilizer factory in the area. That Caleb II became an outstanding citizen of Norfolk is shown by the following newspaper account which appeared in a Norfolk newspaper on September 11, 1886:

> Death of a Prominent Citizen.—The painful intelligence reached the city this morning of the death last night at Blue Ridge Springs of Capt. Caleb L. Upshur, a prominent business man of Norfolk, who had been in feeble health for some time, and had gone to that healthful resort to

---

[203] Anna Greene Riddick (1842-1914) was dau. of Richard Riddick, member of the prominent Riddick Family of Nansemond County.

recuperate. He was accompanied by his wife and three children, and had been at the Springs about six weeks. Captain Upshur, who was about forty-eight years of age, was born on the Eastern Shore of Virginia, but his parents removed during his early boyhood to Nansemond county, where he lived up to the breaking out of the war. At the call of arms he responded promptly, and was an intrepid soldier, serving in Company F, Ninth Virginia Infantry, and bore on his person marks of wounds received during the war. After the war he returned to his home in Nansemond, and was engaged in farming and stock-raising pursuits, until about fifteen years ago, when he removed to Norfolk and engaged in business here, with which he was connected, with an interval of a few years until the time of his death. He was the organizer of the Upshur Guano Company some years ago, and left it to connect himself with the American Fertilizing Company, with which he remained to his death. He was a public-spirited citizen, and served his city faithfully as a member of the Select Council, and was prominent in every movement to advance the interests of Norfolk. He was an honorable, high toned gentleman, suave and gentle in his manners, affectionate in his disposition, and withal firm and unbending where principle was involved, and as brave and chivalrous as any knight of old. Few if any men in the city were more highly respected and esteemed, and none will be more deeply and generally lamented.

Captain Upshur was a member of Ruth Lodge No. 89, A. F. and A. M., Norfolk United Royal Arch Chapter No. 1, Grice Commandery No. 16, Norfolk Lodge No. 1, Royal Arcanum, and Pickett-Buchanan Camp, Confederate Veterans, each of which organizations will attend his funeral when it takes place.

In addition to the civic activities mentioned above, Caleb II was a Director of the Norfolk College for Young Ladies, founded in 1880. He died September 10, 1886, and was buried in Elmwood Cemetery. His grave, unmarked, is just below that of his brother, Hampden Stith Upshur.

Caleb Littleton Upshur II and Anna Greene (Riddick) Upshur had issue:

a. Anna ("Annie") Henderson Upshur, born January 24,

1869, died August 5, 1947. She attended Norfolk College for Young Ladies of which her father was a director. On January 24, 1894, she married Robert Sydney Godwin, born May 6, 1867, died July 1, 1915, buried in Elmwood Cemetery, a member of the old and substantial Godwin Family of Isle of Wight and Nansemond Counties. He was engaged in the brokerage business in Norfolk with his brother-in-law, Caleb Littleton Upshur III. Following the death of her husband, Anna, with her younger sister, Lucy, returned to make her home at the old family farm at Chuckatuck. No issue.

b. Lucy Upshur, died in infancy, buried at St. John's Church, Chuckatuck.

c. An infant, died unnamed, buried at St. John's Church, Chuckatuck.

d. An infant, died unnamed, buried at St. John's Church, Chuckatuck.

e. Henry Upshur, died in infancy, buried at St. John's Church, Chuckatuck.

f. Paulina Upshur, died in infancy, buried at St. John's Church, Chuckatuck.

g. Abel Parker Upshur, died in infancy in 1881, buried in Elmwood Cemetery, Norfolk.

h. Lucy Upshur, born July 31, 1881, died February 14, 1950, unmarried, lived for many years with her sister, Anna, on the old farm at Chuckatuck.

i. Caleb Littleton Upshur III, born August 14, 1882, was engaged in the brokerage business in Norfolk. Caleb III married, June 16, 1910, Maude Allene Walker, born February 12, 1884, daughter of Henry Han and Florence (Roby) Walker. Caleb III died January 28,

1919, at Norfolk and was buried in Elmwood Cemetery. Following his death his widow married Samuel Hawes Allen. Caleb Littleton Upshur III and Maude Allene (Walker) Upshur had issue:

1. Caleb Littleton Upshur IV, born May 14, 1911, married, October 19, 1936, Nancy Barnett Davis, born September 7, 1912, daughter of Cornelius Hampton and Sallie Clare (Barnett) Davis. Issue:

a. Nancy Judith Upshur, born October 23, 1938.

2. Henry Walker Upshur, born November 6, 1913, married, February 18, 1939, Sarah Frances Dawson, born November 30, 1913, daughter of Cary LeRoy and Elizabeth Lawrence (Deane) Dawson. Issue:

a. Cary Dawson Upshur, born January 22, 1940.

b. Henry Walker Upshur, Jr., born December 28, 1944.

j. Littleton Upshur, died in 1887, six months old.

5. Elizabeth ("Betty") Sarah Upshur, born August 11, 1843, died March 2, 1888, married, October 26, 1876, John P. Keeling, born September 25, 1842, died 1917. This couple were residents of Norfolk and were buried in Elmwood Cemetery. No issue.

6. Nancy Stoakley Upshur, born May 6, 1845, married, December 17, 1868, John Richard Whitaker, born May 1, 1842. This couple established their home in Enfield, North Carolina. Issue:

a. John Richard Whitaker, Jr., born April 30, 1874, married, July 29, 1901, Grace May Jennys, born May 3, 1883. Issue:

1. Fenton Jennys Whitaker, born January 3, 1906.

2. John Richard Whitaker III, born November 29, 1907.

b. Elizabeth Hampden Whitaker, born December 30, 1876, married, June 29, 1904, Walter Thomas Clement, born November 3, 1866. Issue:

1. Walter Thomas Clement, Jr., born November 22, 1906.

c. Nancy Upshur Whitaker, born January 8, 1884, died December 26, 1885.

7. Hampden Stith Upshur, born May 1, 1850, died February 12, 1881, buried in Elmwood Cemetery. He was an ardent Mason and took a very active part in that organization in Norfolk until his death. He never married.

Captain Caleb Littleton Upshur I and Martha Jane (Simmons) Upshur, his second wife, had issue:

8. Judith Hanes Upshur, born September 23, 1856, died June 14, 1857.

9. Sallie Hanes Upshur, born August 3, 1859, at Norfolk. She was reared with her younger brother, Robert Lee Upshur, on their grandfather Simmons' plantation on Tanner's Creek. Sallie attended a school for young ladies in Murfreesboro, North Carolina. She married, July 28, 1876, John R. Young, born March 14, 1849, died November 30, 1937, a prosperous business man of Norfolk where they made their home. Sallie died April 10, 1913. Issue:

a. Royden W. Young, born June 10, 1877, died December 28, 1877.

b. Murray H. Young, born November 6, 1878, died December 7, 1878.

c. John R. Young, Jr., born November 1881, died November 1902.

d. Emma Gertrude Young, born July 22, 1883, died November 21, 1950, married, November 4, 1905, Donald Marvin Cheatham, born December 10, 1880, died June 3, 1931, son of the Reverend Henry C. and Emma (Llewellyn) Cheatham. This couple lived and died in Norfolk. Issue:

1. Richard Young Cheatham, born December 30, 1907, married, July 27, 1940, Jean Dudley Hudgins, born June 27, 1918. Issue:

a. Laurel Jean Cheatham, born October 31, 1944.

2. Helen Littleton Cheatham, born October 27, 1919.

e. Helen Upshur Young, born August 5, 1885, married, July 10, 1920, Colonel Elmore Beach Gray, U. S. Army, born June 9, 1888, died November 11, 1950. No issue.

f. Raymond Giraud Young, born November 5, 1887, died February 22, 1953, married, November 3, 1913, Naomi Phillips, born March 15, 1893. This couple made their home in Norfolk. Issue:

1. Sallie Virginia Young, born August 18, 1914, married, June 21, 1941, Cleland Eby Leaman. Issue:

a. Bruce Young Leaman, born October 30, 1946.

2. Margaret Elizabeth Young, born January 10, 1918, married, July 10, 1948, Harry Hunter Roper.

g. Marie Louise Young, born February 13, 1892, died February 13, 1904.

10. Robert Lee Upshur, youngest child of Captain Caleb Littleton and Martha Jane (Simmons) Upshur, was born

December 7, 1862, at Norfolk. At that time his father was running the blockade in Hampton Roads on the side of the Confederacy, so Robert's mother took her infant son and young daughter, Sallie, to her father's plantation on Tanner's Creek. Robert grew up on the big farm with its orchards, cattle, and magnificent waterfront. During this time he attended a private school conducted by a Mr. Jones about two miles from the plantation.

Following the death of his grandfather, Dennis Simmons, the plantation was divided among his four daughters, and Robert's mother inherited the large tract about one mile from the old homeplace. On this tract, also beautifully situated on Tanner's Creek, she tried to farm with an incompetent overseer but the results were unsatisfactory. Robert was sent to Norfolk to live with his older half-brother, Caleb Littleton Upshur II, and there attended Gatewood Military Academy. At sixteen Robert was taken into the office of his half-brother to learn the fertilizer business and he continued in that type of work until a few years before his death.

Robert married, January 17, 1888, Julia Estelle ("Stella") Andrews,[204] born November 23, 1866, at Benevolence, Georgia. When she was a young girl her widowed mother moved the family to Norfolk where "Stella" attended

---

[204] Descent of Julia Estelle Andrews: Isham Andrews left Virginia for Georgia about 1760, had Micajah Andrews m. a Miss Quarterman, had Edward Quarterman Andrews (1800-78), Methodist Minister, m. Elizabeth Beasley, had Christopher Columbus Andrews (1829-76), Methodist Minister, m. Mary Stedman Raboteau (1834-1918), had Julia Estelle Andrews (b. 1866) m. Robert Lee Upshur (1862-1935). See Andrews Family genealogical tree in possession of the author. Mary Stedman Raboteau, supra, was dau. of John Samuel Raboteau II (1805-81) of Fayetteville, N. C., m. Esther Barclay. John and Esther also had a dau., Catherine, m. Allison Francis Page of Cary, N. C., had Walter Hines Page, Ambassador to Great Britain during World War I. John Samuel Raboteau II was son of John Samuel Raboteau I (1766-1838), born in Philadelphia, m. Susannah Graeff of Germantown, Pa., and said John Raboteau I was son of Charles Cornelius Raboteau of New Providence, Penn., m. Elizabeth Klein. See Raboteau lineage in possession of the author. For biography and lineage of Walter Hines Page, Burton J. Hendrick, *The Training of an American* (Boston and New York, 1928); Hendrick, *The Life and Letters of Walter H. Page* (Garden City, N. Y., 1924), I; Tyler, *Encyclopedia of Virginia Biography*, V, 1043-5.

Norfolk College for Young Ladies. A brief paragraph is inadequate to describe "Stella" who, in later years, became the matriarch of her family. Author and advisor to family and friends, she writes for the Norfolk newspapers at the age of eighty-nine, and her mind is as bright and keen as it was when she was eighteen. She is loved by all who know her and her powerful influence for good has been felt by many.

Robert Lee Upshur was an enthusiastic Mason for a number of years during which time he was a member of Owen's Lodge, Norfolk. He was a member of St. Peter's Episcopal Church and a gentleman typical of the old school of chivalry. Robert died March 7, 1935, at the age of seventy-two and was buried in Forest Lawn Cemetery, Norfolk.

Robert Lee and Julia Estelle (Andrews) Upshur had issue:

a. Mary Lee Upshur, born December 27, 1888, at Norfolk, married, June 14, 1915, Roy Elliott, born November 1, 1884, son of Samuel and Martha Jane (Oliver) Elliott of Pataskala, Ohio. Issue:

   1. David Upshur Elliott, born July 6, 1917, married, October 6, 1945, Ethel Lucille Bauer, born May 26, 1918, daughter of George Fred and Louise (Adams) Bauer of Louisville, Kentucky. Issue:

      a. David Upshur Elliott, Jr., born August 1, 1947.

      b. Anne Douglas Elliott, born June 26, 1950.

   2. Margaret Lee Elliott, born August 16, 1919, married April 26, 1944, Robert Bost Knox, Jr.

   3. Mary Upshur Elliott, born April 17, 1928, married, August 26, 1950, William Warfield Ross.

b. Robert Littleton Upshur, born April 13, 1891, at Norfolk, married, May 13, 1917, Penelope Jackson, daughter of William Anderson and Sallie (Etheridge) Jackson of Princess Anne County, Virginia. Robert attended the University of Virginia, and was associated with the Armour Company and later with the Victor Chemical Company of Chicago. In 1940 he returned to Norfolk to make his home. Issue:

1. Jane Pendleton Upshur, born February 5, 1919, married, August 15, 1941, Alfred Eno Woodward of Wheaton, Illinois, born December 15, 1913. This marriage ended in divorce. Jane married, second, May 16, 1955, Thomas L. Barnes. Issue:

a. Robert Upshur Woodward, born March 26, 1943.

b. Anne Pendleton Woodward, born August 5, 1947.

c. David Coleman Woodward, born December 9, 1951.

2. Martha Lee Upshur, born July 31, 1920, married, March 7, 1942, Charles Austin Pritchard, born August 3, 1912, son of Mr. and Mrs. Forrest Archibald Pritchard of Durbin, West Virginia. Issue:

a. Penelope Upshur Pritchard, born July 22, 1943.

b. Charles Austin Pritchard, Jr., born September 9, 1945.

c. Littleton Upshur Pritchard, born July 26, 1951.

3. Stella Andrews Upshur, born May 18, 1926, married, November 6, 1948, William Wardlaw Thompson, Jr., of Norfolk, born March 6, 1925. Issue:

a. Elizabeth Howard Thompson, born March 11, 1950.

b. William Wardlaw Thompson III, born February 21, 1952.

c. Robert Upshur Thompson, born September 3, 1955.

c. Gladys Estelle Upshur, born May 30, 1895, at Norfolk, died June 11, 1920, buried in Forest Lawn Cemetery, Norfolk, married, February 3, 1918, Barney Lee Jones of Fuquay Springs, North Carolina, born February 1895, died April 1921. Issue:

1. The Reverend Barney Lee Jones, Jr., born June 11, 1920, married, June 5, 1944, Marjorie Huntting Curts, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Holroyd Curts of Middletown, Connecticut. Issue:

a. Roy Bradley Jones, born December 22, 1945.

b. Stella Parker Jones, born September 21, 1950.

c. Walter Curts Jones, born April 20, 1952.

d. John Andrews Upshur, author of this genealogy, was born January 9, 1899, at Norfolk. He graduated from the U. S. Naval Academy in 1921. During World War I, while a Midshipman, he performed active service aboard the *U.S.S. Maine.* Later, as an officer, he served for several years aboard the *U.S.S. Oklahoma* in the Pacific, spent four years on destroyers in the Atlantic, completed a tour of duty as Instructor at the Naval Academy, and served for three years on destroyers on the Asiatic Station. After leaving active service in the Navy in 1933, he made his home in Smithfield, Virginia, for a few years. In 1937 he joined the staff of Colonial Williamsburg as Director of their Merchandising Division. Following the outbreak of World War II he took leave of absence to return to active duty in the Navy, serving most of his duty at the Naval

Operating Base, Norfolk, as Executive Officer to the Commander Inshore Patrol, and Administrative Officer for District Operations. Following the surrender of Japan he resumed his former position with Colonial Williamsburg, but plans to retire eventually to the Eastern Shore of Virginia.

He married, July 14, 1928, Eleanor Eve Walton[205] of Augusta, Georgia, born November 27, 1905, graduate of Smith College, and a descendant of that prominent Walton Family of Virginia and Georgia of which George Walton, Signer of the Declaration of Independence, was a distinguished member. Issue:

1. Eleanor Walton Upshur, born December 9, 1931, at Manila, Philippine Islands.

2. John Andrews Upshur, Jr., born July 26, 1933, at Annapolis, Maryland.

e. Margaret Esther Upshur, born December 19, 1902, at Norfolk, married, December 22, 1928, William Bowen Ault of Enterprise, Oregon, born October 6, 1898, graduated from the U. S. Naval Academy in 1922. At the beginning of World War II he was a Commander attached to the *U.S.S. Lexington.* He was killed in action during the Battle of the Coral Sea, 1942, while returning from a successful bomber attack against

---

[205] Descent of Eleanor Eve Walton: Robert Walton (d. 1734) of New Kent County, Va., m. Frances, had George Walton (1724/5-1797) of Prince Edward County m. Martha Hughes (b. 1734), had Robert Walton (1754-1800) immigrated to Richmond County, Ga., prior to the Revolution m. Blanche Glasscock (b. 1757), had Robert Walton (1791-1870) of Augusta, Ga., m. Evelina Sarah Watkins (1796-1868), had Robert Walton 1826-1908) of Augusta m. Virginia Meals Combs (1833-1918), had Robert Walton (1867-1939) of Augusta m. Lucy Eleanor Wilson (b. 1870) of Barnwell County, S. C., had Eleanor Eve Walton (b. 1905) m. John Andrews Upshur (b. 1899). Robert Walton Robertson, "Walton Genealogy," *Historical Collection, Georgia Chapter, D.A.R.,* II, 329-40; see also Walton Family records in possession of Eleanor (Walton) Upshur. For Lucy Eleanor Wilson ancestry, see Elizabeth Willis DeHuff, *Ancestors of Reuben Bailey Wilson of South Carolina* (Augusta, Ga., 1954).

JOHN ANDREWS UPSHUR, JR.,
ninth generation of the Upshur Family in Virginia, stands below a portrait of
Abel Parker Upshur I

a Japanese aircraft carrier. He was posthumously awarded the Navy Cross. Margaret married, second, May 13, 1955, William Shands Meacham (see 1954-55 *Who's Who in America*), born January 15, 1900, at Petersburg, Virginia. Issue:

1. William Upshur Ault, born December 8, 1932.

2. Robert Bowen Ault, born April 23, 1937.

D. John D. Upshur, born in 1809 at "Rose Cottage," married, 1836, Elizabeth Ann Faulcon[206] of Surry County. John died July 26, 1838, perhaps at "Cedar Cottage," his home on Warehouse Creek, Northampton County. The following death notice appeared in the August 7, 1838, issue of the *Richmond Whig:*

> Died on the 26 of July, at his residence in Northampton County, John D. Upshur, Esq., in the 29th year of his age. This is a sore bereavement to a large circle of connections and attached friends. Mr. Upshur was a man to make friends and retain them. Honourable, upright, frank, sincere, generous, and true are the qualities which won him respect and confidence wherever he was known; while his deportment, peculiarly mild and enviable, bound to him his more familiar associates by ties unusually strong and endearing. That one so good and pure should have died so young is certainly best for him. He died a believing Christian, adding the grace of a perfect faith to the practice of a spotless life. But the friends he has left behind, however this reflection may soften their regrets, cannot but feel deeply the loss which their own society has sustained; and moreover, that prospects so flattering and happy, should have been so suddenly and so deeply overcast.

John D. and Elizabeth Ann (Faulcon) Upshur had issue:

1. Mary Elizabeth Upshur, born about 1837, married her first cousin, Thomas Wilson Upshur.[207] No issue.

E. Mary Jane Upshur was born at "Rose Cottage" but the dates

---

[206] See 198*n*.

[207] *Ibid.*, and related text.

of her birth and death have not been determined. Although Thomas Teackle Upshur II wrote that she never married, the author believes that she may have been the Mary Upshur of Norfolk who married Major William Goode, born January 7, 1791.

F. Robert Stith Upshur, born in 1815 at "Rose Cottage," died December 6, 1883. In 1842 he went to New Orleans where he entered the U. S. Customs Service, and after the Civil War became Collector of Accounts in that city. On April 6, 1847, he married Angelina Lafferranderie, born July 1, 1826, died May 4, 1895, daughter of Antoine Gustave Lafferranderie of Petit Goave, San Domingo, and Lelia (Cruzat) Lafferranderie of New Orleans. Issue:

1. Robert Brown Upshur of New Orleans, born May 17, 1851. He was in the real estate business with D. Merciers and Sons of that city for many years. He married, October 29, 1878, Adele Nores, a native of Bordeaux, France, died March 11, 1919. Robert was living and enjoying good health at the age of eighty-six when the author corresponded with him in 1937. Issue:

a. Robert Ashton Upshur, born March 13, 1880, died March 21, 1880.

b. Albert Sidney Upshur, born March 13, 1882, died March 13, 1882.

c. Lelia Upshur, twin sister of Albert Sidney Upshur, born March 13, 1882, married, June 8, 1910, Theodore Louis Lucien Soniat du Fossat, Jr., died in 1937. Issue:

1. Dr. Theodore Louis Lucien Soniat, born October 4, 1911, married, July 29, 1936, Mary Yerger Thomas of New Orleans.

2. Edwin J. Soniat, born December 26, 1915.

3. Joel Soniat, born April 12, 1918.

4. Yvonne Soniat, born October 8, 1920.

2. Estelle Upshur, born November 17, 1854, died June 9, 1867.

G. Sallie Stith Upshur, born December 26, 1815, at "Rose Cottage," died December 25, 1871, never married. She was buried in Oak Hill Cemetery, Washington, D. C., beside her brother, Abel Brown Upshur.

H. Abel Brown Upshur was born October 25, 1821, at "Rose Cottage." He was an elegant gentleman, refined in manner, honored and respected by all who knew him. He spent the greater part of his life in Washington and Baltimore, and for many years prior to 1881 was in the service of the Navy Department. During the Civil War he served in the Office of Ordnance and Hydrography of the Confederate Navy in Richmond. His wife, Columbia Wingfield (Williams)[208] Upshur, born July 11, 1828, at "Tudor Place," Georgetown, D. C., died April 18, 1886, was a great great granddaughter of Martha (Dandridge) Custis-Washington, wife of George Washington. Abel died February 6, 1895, and was buried in Oak Hill Cemetery beside his wife and sister, Sallie Stith Upshur. No issue.

I. Hampden Stith Upshur was born at "Rose Cottage." The dates of his birth and death have not been found. He attended the University of Pennsylvania Medical School in 1844, and receiped a medical degree in 1845. Hampden Stith Upshur never married.

---

[208] See *162n.*

Chapter IX

BROWNSVILLE BRANCH

Thomas Upshur I

(*ca.* 1713-50/1)

THOMAS UPSHUR I, youngest son of Arthur II and Sarah (Browne) Upshur, was born about 1713 at "Warwick." The exact date of his birth has not been determined and his tombstone has not been found, but he died in 1750/1 for his will was dated and proved in court during that year.

In 1734 Thomas I entered into a covenant deed with his parents for the plantation which for generations has been known as "Brownsville."[209] He agreed to surrender the plantation to his parents whenever they should call upon him to do so, thus his parents retained a life interest in the property. Thomas I is the first Upshur who is definitely known to have lived at "Brownsville," although his father, Arthur Upshur II, may have lived there for a short time following his marriage to Sarah Browne.[210]

About 1738 Thomas Upshur I married Sarah Bell[211] who bore

---

[209] Deed of Gift to Thomas Upshur I for "Brownsville," Northampton Deeds, 1733-50, 30. Description of "Brownsville," Appendix, Note XII. See 79*n*, 80*n*.

[210] See 75*n*, 77*n*, and related text.

[211] Descent of Sarah Bell: Thomas Bell I (*ca.* 1618-78) of Northampton County, E. S. Va. immigrant, had Robert Bell (d. 1724) m. Mary Cutting, sister of William Cutting (d. 1704), had Thomas Bell (d. *ca.* 1768) m. Mary Watson, dau. of Robert Watson (d. 1708/9), had Sarah Bell m. Thomas Upshur I (*ca.* 1713-51). All the above lived on the E. S. Va. For Bell Family of E. S. Va., Northampton and Accomack County records, *passim*; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; Nottingham, *Wills and Administrations, Accomack County, Virginia, 1663-1800, passim*; Johnston, *Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Maryland*, plate II, 22.

Brownsville, Northampton County

Plantation owned continuously by descendants of original patentee

Present house built by John Upshur in 1806

him two sons, Thomas Upshur II and Brown Upshur. After the death of Thomas I his widow married (bond dated April 14, 1752) Henry Gascoigne, and bore him a daughter, Sarah, and probably other children.

Will of Thomas Upshur I[212]

In the name of God, Amen I Thomas Upshur of the County of Northampton, in the Colony of Virginia.

Imprimis I give and Bequeath, unto my Loving Wife Sarah Upshur two Negroes named Will and Sue, and her increase hereafter, I say I give the said Negroes to my Wife as Long as She Lives, and after her decease unto my Son Brown Upshur and Likewise I give her a Low Chest of Draws, and a Seal Skin Trunk, and my horse Called Spark and one Bed and furniture, and Likewise I give her the use of the best Room below, as long as she lives.

Item I give and Bequeath unto my son Thomas Upshur the Plantation wherein I Live, and to the heirs of his Body Lawfully Begotten forever and for want of such heirs unto my Son Brown, and to the heirs of his Body Lawfully Begotten forever and likewise I give unto my Son Thomas Upshur, Two Negroes named Toney and Comfort, and my Writing Desk, and my Silver headed Cane,[213] and a young horse, which he called his own, and my gun which I used to call Dent, and a Bed and furniture, and a pair of horsemill Stones, and all Belonging to them.

Item I give and bequeath my Son Brown Upshur, three Negroes named Candis and Dick, and Alce, and my Silver Tankard, and my two Guns, not already given, and my Sword and Pistolls, and Bed and furniture, and Six Black Chairs, which belonged to my Father, and the Largest Cheary Tree Table, and my whinjard, and my Will is that my Wife should have the use of all my Negroes, till my two Sons Comes to age, and then to be divided According to my Will, and my Will is further, that my two sons should have Three years Schooling, a piece and as for the rest of my moveable Estate not already given away, my Will is, that it should be Equally divided, Between my Wife and my two Sons.

Lastly I do hereby nominate Constitute and Appoint William Bell to be my whole Executor of this my Last Will and Testament. As Witness my hand and Seal this 7th day of January in the year 1751 [1750/1 ?].

Thomas Upshur Seal

---

[212] Will of Thomas Upshur I, Northampton Wills, Invs., Divs., Etc., 1750-54, 28-9; *Ibid.*, 73-5, for inventory of his estate.

[213] See Appendix, Note XII, for story of this cane.

William Bell

Thomas Fisher Junr

Item whereas I have Omitted in the foregoing Part of my Will, to forbid the sale of my sons Thomas and Brown Upshur Perishable Estates, therefore I desire and my Will is that the said Estates be not sold, as tis Comon in such Cases, but that it be continued on the Plantation in the hands of my Widow, while my two Sons before mentioned comes to the age of twenty one years, and then paid them in Specie.

Thomas Upshur Seal

Proved March 12, 1750/1.

Thomas I and Sarah (Bell) Upshur had issue:

I. Thomas Upshur II was born July 2, 1739, at "Brownsville." He inherited this plantation upon the death of his father, and in 1785 added to his real estate by the purchase of an adjoining farm to the north called "Upshurshire."[214] Like his father, Thomas II was a planter, and records indicate that he was very successful. He was frequently referred to in old family records as Captain Thomas Upshur, and Thomas Teackle Upshur II claimed that he served as an officer in a company of Minute Men during the Revolutionary War.[215]

On February 1, 1761, Thomas II married Anne Stockley,[216]

---

[214] Thomas Upshur II left this farm to his son, Thomas Stockley Upshur (*ca.* 1768-*ca.* 1796). Upon the latter's death the title went to his sister, Anne Stockley Upshur (b. *ca.* 1765), who married John Teackle II (1762-1811) of "Craddock." In his will of 1811, Teackle called the farm "Upshurshire." His son, Dr. John Upshur Teackle (1803-50) of Baltimore, sold the farm in 1833, and the deed called it "Uppershire," the spelling generally used by Upshur decendants.

[215] There are several Revolutionary War records of a Thomas Upshur of Virginia, but the author believes each refers to Thomas Upshaw of the Upshaw branch from Essex and Caroline Counties. However, the names of many officers and men who served as Minute Men during the Revolutionary War were never entered in the official records, and the omission of the name of Thomas Upshur II is a case in point for family records and tradition indicate that he served as a Minute Man.

[216] Descent of Anne Stockley: John Stockley (d. *ca.* 1673) of Accomack County, wife Elizabeth, had Francis Stockley II (d. 1698), wife Sarah, had Francis Stockley III (d. 1741) m. Elizabeth Eyre (according to Thomas Teackle Upshur II she was dau. of John Eyre who died in 1719), had Eyre Stockley (d. 1740) m. Mary Bell (d. 1784), dau. of Nathaniel Bell (1689-1745/6) and Mary Scarburgh (West) Bell (b. 1691), had Anne Stockley (1739-1817) m. Thomas Upshur II (1739-92). All the above lived on the E. S. Va. Johnston, *Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Maryland*, plate II, 22; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; Appendix, Note XIII.

born 1739, died October 22, 1817, by whom he had six children who lived to be grown. Thomas II died December 19, 1792,[217] at "Brownsville," and both he and his wife are buried there in the family burying ground with many of their descendants. Issue:

A. John Upshur was born December 29, 1761, at "Brownsville." He was a prominent, wealthy, and highly respected citizen of the Eastern Shore. He was a successful planter and merchant, and for a time was High Sheriff of Northampton County. Among his various enterprises was the operation of a castor oil mill. He was a large shipper of corn to New England ports, using chartered vessels which loaded at his wharf on Brownsville Creek. By the will of his father John Upshur inherited the northern half of "Brownsville" containing 631 acres, and in 1806 built the present home now occupied by his descendants.[218] In 1823 he purchased the southern half of the tract, thus reuniting the entire tract first patented by his ancestor, John Browne. He added further to his real estate through the purchase of a 470-acre tract, later known as "Merton," on the bayside and "Essex" in Upshur's Neck.

John Upshur, usually referred to in the family records as John Upshur of "Brownsville," married three times. He married, first, May 14, 1792, Elizabeth Gore,[219] widow of his second cousin, Abel Upshur II. Elizabeth was John's first love and had been his sweetheart before her marriage to his cousin. She was a delicate woman when she married John, so they moved to the bayside for her health and placed an overseer at "Brownsville" while John engaged in merchadising in Franktown with John

---

[217] Will of Thomas Upshur II dated June 10, 1789, Northampton Wills, Etc., 1792-95, 100.
[218] Appendix, Note XII.
[219] See 116*n* and related text.

T. Elliott. Elizabeth bore John no children and died January 16, 1794, three years after her marriage, and was buried at "Warwick" beside her first husband. John returned to "Brownsville" to live.

John Upshur married, second, October 24, 1798, Elizabeth Brown Upshur, born December 28, 1775, died April 21, 1804, his second cousin, daughter of Caleb and Anne (Brown) Upshur of "Rose Cottage." Elizabeth lived less than six years after her marriage, but bore John four children. She was buried at "Brownsville."

John Upshur married, third, June 9, 1808, Elizabeth Upshur (Teackle)[220] Yerby, born March 17, 1776, died February 8, 1837, buried at "Brownsville." She was the widow of Dr. George Yerby of Lancaster County when she married John. By her first husband she had one child, Dr. George Teackle Yerby of Northampton County, able physician and Delegate to the Virginia Legislature for sixteen years. Elizabeth bore John four children. John Upshur died September 29, 1842, at "Brownsville" and was buried in the family burying ground with his last two wives.

John Upshur and Elizabeth Brown (Upshur) Upshur, his second wife, had issue:

1. Thomas Brown Upshur, born July 17, 1799, died July 29, 1800.
2. William Brown Upshur I, born November 5, 1801, died August 23, 1884, married, November 3, 1851, Catherine Teackle Neale,[221] died February 26, 1911.

---

[220] Elizabeth Upshur Teackle (1776-1837) was dau. of Col. Thomas Teackle III (*ca.* 1734-84) and Elizabeth (Upshur) Teackle (*ca.* 1740-82) of "Craddock." See 101*n* and related text.

[221] Catherine Teackle Neale was dau. of William Neale and Elizabeth Teackle (Smith) Neale (1798-1857), dau. of Charles and Catherine (Teackle) Smith (b. 1768) of "Moratico Hall," Richmond, County. See 103*n* and related text.

This couple had no issue and were buried at "Brownsville."

3. Anne Upshur, born October 26, 1802, died June 16, 1803.
4. John Caleb Upshur, born March 24, 1804, died August 3, 1804.

John Upshur and Elizabeth Upshur (Teackle) Yerby-Upshur, his third wife, had issue:

5. Anne Elizabeth Upshur, born September 1, 1809, died July 1885 at her home in Princess Anne, Maryland. She never married.
6. Sallie Teackle Brown Upshur, born August 21, 1811, died May 30, 1892, married, October 7, 1834, William W. Handy of Princess Anne, born February 21, 1802, died July 31, 1857. Sallie was his second wife. Issue:
   a. The Reverend William Collins Handy.
   b. Sallie Brown Upshur Handy.
7. A son, born May 28, 1816, died May 29, 1816.
8. Thomas Teackle Upshur I, born September 4, 1817, at "Brownsville," died July 1, 1889, studied medicine at the University of Virginia. He married, April 12, 1842, Elizabeth Teackle Smith,[222] born June 15, 1822, died February 7, 1886. This couple were natives of Northampton County, but spent the latter part of their lives in Princess Anne where they died. Both were

---

[222] Elizabeth Teackle Smith (1822-86) was dau. of Isaac Smith III (1768-1846) of "Sea View," near Eastville, son of Isaac Smith II (1734-1813) of "Selma," Eastville. See 103*n*. The mother of Elizabeth was Anne Stockley (Teackle) Smith (1788-1862), dau. of Col. John Teackle II (1762-1811), son of Col. Thomas Teackle III (*ca.* 1734-84). See 101*n*. Anne was the second wife of Isaac Smith III, his first wife having been Maria, dau. of Judge Francis Hopkinson of Philadelphia, Signer of the Declaration of Independence.

buried in the cemetery of Manokin Presbyterian Church of that town. Issue:

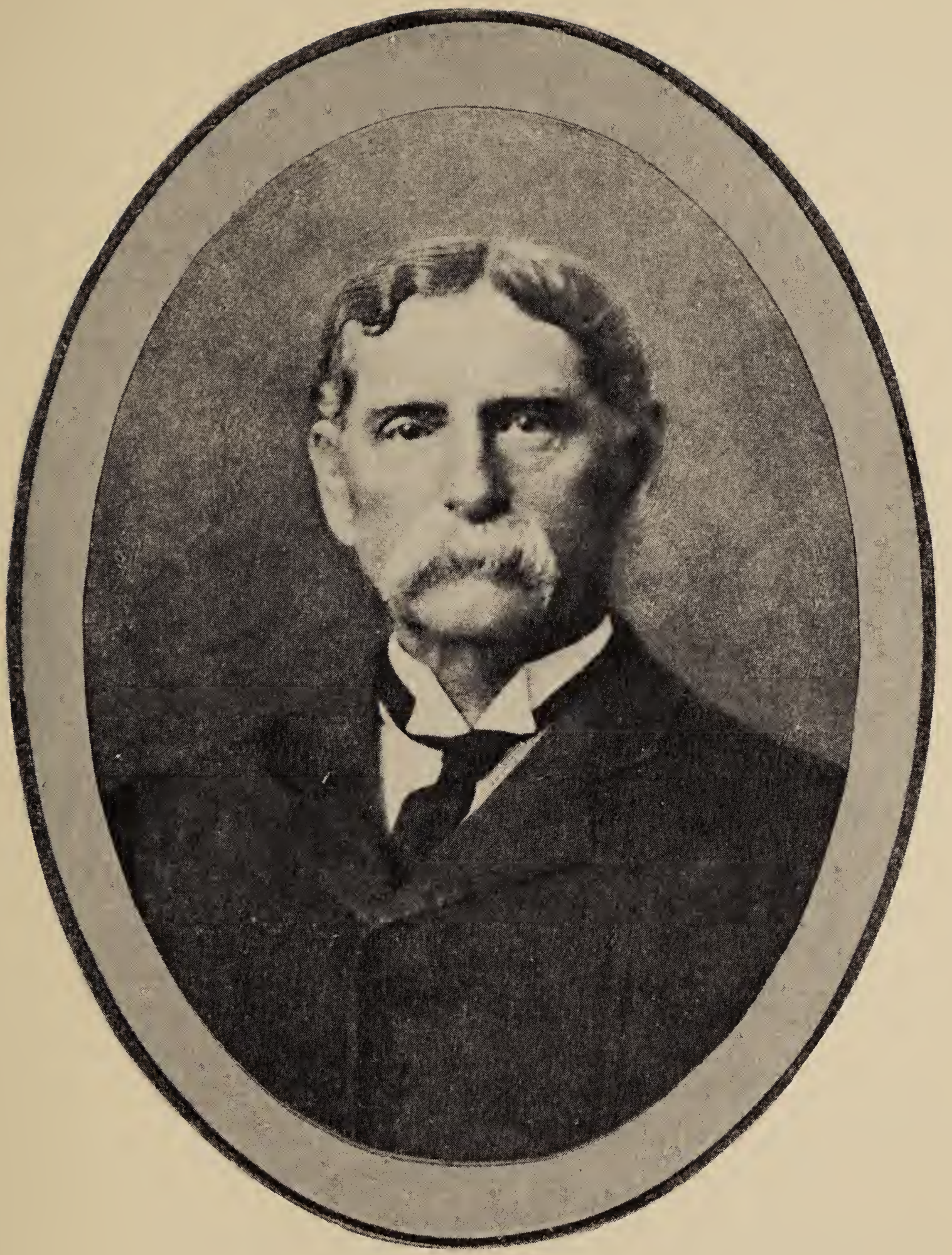
a. John Upshur, born September 1, 1843, died June 21, 1887, at Princess Anne.

b. Thomas Teackle Upshur II was born December 22, 1844, at "Upshurshire."[223] He entered Virginia Military Institute in 1859 and continued his studies there until the Civil War began. On June 8, 1861, he enlisted in the Confederate Army and served bravely throughout the war, fighting in nine major battles and twenty-nine skirmishes. Following the war he went to Sumter, South Carolina, where he married, September 5, 1871, Caroline DeSaussure Blanding,[224] born June 14, 1852, died March 26, 1940. After working for several years in Sumter, and a few years in Texas trying his fortune at sheep raising, Thomas II and his family moved to Virginia in 1884 and established their home at "Brownsville." Here he began his historical and genealogical work in which he was stedfastly engaged for more than twenty-five years. He spent many years in restoring and transcribing the early court records of Northampton and Accomack Counties, thus helping to preserve the oldest continuous court records in America. He was recognized as an authority on the history of the Eastern Shore, and was an outstanding genealogist of the period. His manuscripts include the history of every important family then living on the Eastern Shore of Virginia. Thomas II died December 14, 1910, at "Brownsville" where both he and his wife were buried.

---

[223] See 214*n*.

[224] Caroline DeSaussure Blanding (1852-1940) was dau. of Col. James Douglas Blanding (1821-1906) and Lenora Agnes (McFaddin) Blanding (1831-86), dau. of Capt. James Dickey and Frances Adelaide (Spiers) McFaddin, all of Sumter, S. C.



THOMAS TEACKLE UPSHUR II
(1844-1910)
Historian and Genealogist

Except for one or two pamphlets and a number of articles in historical magazines, he died before his great store of knowledge could be put into print for permanent record.

Thomas Teackle Upshur II and Caroline DeSaussure (Blanding) Upshur had issue:

1. Elizabeth Upshur, born November 24, 1872, died August 25, 1887, at "Brownsville."

2. James Blanding Upshur, born August 21, 1874, died October 2, 1889, at "Brownsville."

3. Lenora McFaddin Upshur, born December 11, 1876, married, August 9, 1899, Thomas Percival Robinson, born May 7, 1856, died January 5, 1916. This couple made their home in Germantown, Pennsylvania. Issue:

a. Lenora Blanding Robinson, born May 11, 1900, married, June 29, 1921, Reginald Evans Graeff, born June 27, 1898, died May 30, 1951. Issue:

(1). James Thomas Graeff born April 25, 1923.

(2). Elizabeth Ann Graeff, born June 6, 1926.

b. Anna Barney Robinson, born February 10, 1908, married, November 2, 1943, Joshua Byron Westcott, born July 27, 1898.

4. William Brown Upshur III, born November 28, 1878, died June 29, 1929, married June 4, 1903, Caroline Payne Martin, born October 24, 1881, daughter of Colonel James and Florence (Watkins) Martin of Winston, North Carolina. This

couple made their home in Sumter, South Carolina. Issue:

a. James Blanding Upshur, born April 6, 1904, married, June 3, 1929, Martha Poag, born November 23, 1905. Issue:

(1). William Blanding Upshur, born May 19, 1930.

(2). Rebecca Caroline Upshur, born November 8, 1931, married, November 8, 1952, DeSaussure Bull.

(3). Martha Poag Upshur, born April 6, 1938.

b. John Dupuy Upshur, born July 16, 1906, died June 23, 1907.

c. William Brown Upshur IV, born June 11, 1909, died June 20, 1923.

d. Dorothy DeSaussure Upshur, born January 20, 1911, married, August 2, 1937, Henry Glenn Oetgen, born July 3, 1913, died December 17, 1953.

e. Donald Martin Upshur, born July 17, 1912, died September 14, 1950, married, September 6, 1942, Claire Rhoda Powell, daughter of Clayton L. Powell of Riverside, Illinois. Issue:

(1). John Lewis Upshur, born January 16, 1945.

(2). Gertrude Upshur, born April 29, 1947.

f. Dr. Thomas Teackle Upshur IV, born February 22, 1915, married, February 22, 1942, Betsy Cox of Mobile, Alabama. Issue:

(1). Dianna DeSaussure Upshur, born June 13, 1943.

(2). Elizabeth Teackle Upshur, born September 4, 1946.

(3). Fontaine Murdock Upshur, born December 1, 1947.

(4). Carol Martin Upshur, born January 18, 1949.

(5). Thomas Teackle Upshur V, born August 26, 1952.

g. Robert Irving Upshur, born May 30, 1918, married, October 7, 1950, Helen Doris Nash, born October 21, 1922, daughter of John Clayton and Jessie (Bounds) Nash. Issue:

(1). David Nash Upshur, born November 3, 1952.

(2). John Irving Upshur, born December 31, 1953.

5. Florence Irving Upshur, born September 13, 1880, married, December 27, 1917, John Ashby Dick, born September 29, 1868, died February 2, 1943. Issue:

a. Anne Floyd Dick, born July 13, 1919, married, January 26, 1946, William Horace Cockerill. Issue:

(1). Anne Fauntleroy Cockerill, born June 24, 1947.

(2). William Horace Cockerill, Jr., born August 19, 1948.

(3). Charles Overton Cockerill, born December 24, 1950.

(4). Thomas Upshur Cockerill, born June 16, 1952.

b. Esther Macdonald Dick, born December 29, 1921, married, November 2, 1940, Woodrow Wilson Bralley, born October 2, 1912. Issue:

(1). David Macdonald Bralley, born April 5, 1946.

(2). Stephen Wilson Bralley, born May 23, 1949.

(3). Richard Blanding Bralley, born November 15, 1954.

6. Anne Floyd Upshur, born October 25, 1882, has lived at "Brownsville" since early childhood. She collaborated with Ralph T. Whitelaw in writing *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, and perhaps knows more about the history of the Eastern Shore and the Upshur Family than anyone now living. She has been of inestimable assistance to the author in preparing this genealogy.

7. Caroline DeSaussure Upshur, born January 30, 1886, died September 18, 1948, married, September 10, 1910, Henry Ball Baker, born June 18, 1882. This couple made their home in West Chester, Pennsylvania. Issue:

a. Henry Ball Baker, Jr., born January 4, 1912, married, September 9, 1941, Betty Worrel, born September 15, 1914. Issue:

(1). David Worrel Baker, born October 8, 1942.

(2). Henry Ball Baker III, born April 5, 1948.

(3). Benjamin Allen Baker, born January 7, 1950.

(4). Rob Owen Baker, born May 27, 1951.

b. Caroline Upshur Baker, born May 23, 1913, married, June 22, 1934, Clarence Wesley Woodcock, born May 23, 1910. Issue:

(1). Carolyn Upshur Woodcock, born September 15, 1935.

(2). Claire Dunne Woodcock, born October 26, 1937.

(3). Clarence Wesley Woodcock, Jr., born May 12, 1943.

c. Elizabeth Fontaine Baker, born January 31, 1915, married, January 18, 1936, Raymond Eldon Olmstead, born January 10, 1914. Issue:

(1). Sarita Eldon Olmstead, born May 27, 1938.

(2). Fontaine Jacqueline Olmstead, born May 23, 1939.

d. Thomas Upshur Baker, born January 5, 1925.

8. Thomas Teackle Upshur III, born August 17, 1888, died May 31, 1915, buried at "Brownsville."

9. Henry DeSaussure Blanding Upshur, born November 4, 1890, married, December 28, 1920, Eleanor Leola Lambert, born August 30, 1890. Issue:

a. Eleanor Lambert Upshur, born January 16,

1923, married, May 17, 1942, George Williams Poythress.

b. Hamilton Brown Upshur, born August 3, 1924, married, October 15, 1949, Martha Harriet Ellis.

10. Sarita Reed Upshur, born April 28, 1895, died September 18, 1934, married, April 2, 1921, Curry Thomas, born November 10, 1888, died July 22, 1936. This couple had no issue and were buried at Cape Charles, Virginia.

c. Florence Upshur, born March 7, 1847, died August 18, 1900, married, November 15, 1865, Judge Levin Thomas Handy Irving, born April 8, 1828, near Salisbury, Maryland, died August 23, 1892. Judge Irving was an able lawyer and statesman, and for many years was Judge of the Court of Appeals of Maryland. He was the son of Dr. Thomas Handy and Margaret (Ker) Irving of the Eastern Shore of Maryland. Judge and Mrs. Irving were buried in the Manokin Church Cemetery, Princess Anne. Issue:

1. Margaret Irving, born and died on October 31, 1875.

d. Alice Brown Upshur, born June 9, 1849, died May 11, 1850.

e. William Brown Upshur II, born November 13, 1854, died November 17, 1855.

f. Anne Elizabeth Upshur, born October 19, 1857, died unmarried before August 10, 1926, the date her will was probated, and was buried in the Manokin Church Cemetery, Princess Anne.

g. Sallie Brown Upshur, born July 3, 1859, died De-

cember 19, 1886, married, March 19, 1884, William Handy Dashiell, son of the Reverend John H. and Emily (Irving) Dashiell of Somerset County. No issue.

h. Mary Graham Upshur, born and died on February 5, 1861.

B. Anne Stockley Upshur, eldest daughter of Thomas II and Anne (Stockley) Upshur, was born about 1765 at "Brownsville." She married, December 18, 1783, Colonel John Teackle II of "Craddock," born January 12, 1762, died February 18, 1811, son of Colonel Thomas Teackle III[225] and Elizabeth (Upshur) Teackle. Issue:

1. Elizabeth Upshur Teackle, born September 26, 1784, died April 6, 1806, married Harrison Ball[226] of Richmond County, and had issue.
2. Thomas Upshur Teackle, born March 29, 1786, died August 3, 1787.
3. Anne Stockley Teackle, born March 17, 1788, died December 11, 1862, married, April 6, 1814, Isaac Smith III[227] of "Sea View," born November 8, 1768, died November 27, 1846. Anne was his second wife and bore him several children, one of whom was Elizabeth Teackle Smith who married Thomas Teackle Upshur I.
4. Mary Upshur Teackle, born April 29, 1790, died August 1846, married John Rutter of Baltimore, and had issue.
5. Lavinia Upshur Teackle, born October 11, 1792, died March 25, 1853, married Captain William Graham of

---

225 See 101*n* and related text.

226 H. E. Hayden, *Virginia Genealogies* (Washington, 1931), 104.

227 See 222*n*, 101*n*, and related text.

Newry, Ireland, born July 4, 1787, died November 30, 1864, in Baltimore, and had issue.

6. Sarah Upshur Teackle, born May 7, 1795, died October 30, 1867, married William S. Pawson of Baltimore, born August 24, 1798, died May 30, 1884, and had issue.

7. Thomas Upshur Teackle, born November 2, 1797, died September 13, 1863, married, April 23, 1839, Emma Wilson, died December 19, 1861, daughter of Thomas Wilson of Baltimore, and had issue.

8. Susanna Brown Upshur Teackle, born April 26, 1800, at "Craddock," died June 11, 1881, at "Avon," near Baltimore, married, September 5, 1820, Francis Hopkinson Smith I,[228] born March 14, 1797, at "Ingleside," near Eastville, and died there February 14, 1872. This couple had nine children among whom was Francis Hopkinson Smith II, born October 23, 1838, died April 8, 1915, distinguished author who married Josephine, daughter of William Vandeventer of Astoria, Long Island, and had issue.

9. Dr. John Upshur Teackle, born October 15, 1803, died June 9, 1851, never married. He was a well-known Baltimore physician. He died in Baltimore and was buried in Greenmount Cemetery where many of his kinsmen were buried.

10. St. George Williamson Teackle, born January 26, 1806, died March 26, 1874, was a prominent Baltimore lawyer. He married, October 27, 1836, Catherine Hays of Baltimore, born September 2, 1815, died April 17, 1896, and had issue.

---

[228] Francis Hopkinson Smith I (1797-1872) was son of Isaac Smith III (1768-1846) and his first wife, Maria (Hopkinson) Smith (1773-1806). See 222*n*; Smith, "Smith, Teackle, Upshur Families."

C. Sarah Brown Upshur, third child of Thomas II and Anne (Stockley) Upshur, was born April 14, 1767, at "Brownsville," died January 23, 1819, married, October 23, 1786, Colonel Peter Hack[229] of "Fairview," on Nandua Creek near Craddockville, Accomack County, born April 11, 1754, died October 18, 1844. Sarah was his second wife and was buried at his left side in the Hack Family burying ground at "Fairview." Issue:

1. Dr. Peter Thomas Upshur Hack, born January 15, 1793, died July 31, 1838, married, first, January 15, 1823, Sallie T. Selby, second, January 10, 1829, Harriet Fleming Selby. Issue by both wives.
2. Sallie Brown Upshur Hack, died 1874, married Colonel Thomas Hatton Kellam of "Evergreen," Accomack County. No issue.
3. John William Hack married Sabra, daughter of Thomas Cropper of Accomack County, and had issue.
4. Melinda Upshur Hack, died about 1862, unmarried.
5. Ann Q. S. Hack, died 1827, unmarried.
6. Cave Jones Hack married Charlotte Dennis.

D. Thomas Stockley Upshur, second son of Thomas II and Anne (Stockley) Upshur, was born about 1768 at "Brownsville," died about 1796, studied law at the College of William and Mary, and practiced in Richmond. He inherited "Upshurshire"[230] which, after his death, passed to his sister, Anne Stockley (Upshur) Teackle, and then to her son, Dr. John Upshur Teackle of Baltimore. Thomas Stockley Upshur never married.

---

[229] Col. Peter Hack (1754-1844) was brother of Ann Hack (b. 1750) who married Abel Upshur II (1756-90). See 115*n*.

[230] See 214*n*.

E. William Bell Eyre Upshur died when he was about eighteen as a result of the bite of a water moccasin.

F. Mary Upshur was a twin sister of William Bell Eyre Upshur. She married (bond dated January 14, 1794) the Reverend Cave Jones, an early Rector of St. George's Church, Accomack County. This couple moved to New York where the Reverend Jones became Assistant Rector of Trinity Church. They lived and died on Park Row, and their home subsequently became the site of the Century Publishing Company. Issue:

1. Lydia Jones lived to be a very elderly lady and died unmarried.

2. Anne Jones, the younger daughter, survived her elder sister and died about 1895, unmarried. She had inherited considerable property which, except for her furniture and silver, was bequeathed to the Virginia Theological Seminary, Alexandria, Virginia. This bequest was reported to be worth about one hundred thousand dollars at that time. Anne gave most of her furniture and silver to Washington and Lee University, Lexington, Virginia.

G. One or more children of Thomas II and Anne (Stockley) Upshur died in infancy. Their names and dates of birth are unknown.

II. Brown Upshur, second son of Thomas I and Sarah (Bell) Upshur, was born about 1740 at "Brownsville." He was living in 1751, but died before he reached manhood.

APPENDIX

NOTE I

UPCHER FAMILY IN ENGLAND

Arthur Upcher (Arthur Upshur I), Eastern Shore of Virginia immigrant, was born in Essex County, England, about 1624. His parentage has not been determined. It has been mentioned that his parents might have been Thomas Upcher of Colchester, Essex County, and Anne (Ayre) Upcher of London, who were granted a marriage bond by the Bishop of London in 1621.[231] The date of the marriage bond, 1621, and the date of Arthur's birth, 1624, make this parentage a reasonable possibility. However, at the beginning of the seventeenth century there were in Essex County numerous Upchers from whom Arthur might have descended.

Although the author has accumulated many early records of the English Upchers, they are inconclusive as to Arthur's parentage. He hopes to continue the search of the English records, particularly those of Essex County where the Upcher name has been in evidence for many centuries. Parish registers in the possession of the Society of Genealogists, Chaucer House, London, court rolls, chancery bills, and subsidy rolls should also be explored. Full transcriptions of Virginia's historical records are currently being made in England and in the future should be available at the Virginia State Library; these records, too, should be studied.

---

[231] See 10*n*.

When a careful investigation of these additional sources can be made it is believed that Arthur's parentage will be revealed.

The origin of the Upcher name is a matter of speculation. It is possible that it was derived by the first bearer from his residence at Upsall in Yorkshire, or at Upshire, a hamlet in Waltham Hundred, Essex County. Among the earliest records of the name are those of Geoffrey de Upsal and Richard de Upsale of Yorkshire in the year 1273.

In ancient English and early American records the name appears variously as Upchar, Upcher, Upchur, Upchurch, Upcott, Upsal, Upshall, Upshaw, Upshear, Upsher, Upshire, Upshor, Upshott, Upshur, and others. Of these the name *Upcher* in England, and *Upshur* and *Upshaw* in America have been most generally in evidence during the past three hundred years.

During the past one hundred and fifty years "Sheringham Hall" has been the principal seat of the Upcher Family[232] in England. In 1812 Abbot Upcher bought Sheringham estate on the North Sea, near Cromer, Norfolk County, England, and the next year laid the first stone for "Sheringham Hall." Abbot died in 1819 before the Hall was completed, but his son, Henry Ramey Upcher, finished the construction in 1838 at the time of his marriage. The furniture came by sea from London; the ship was beached at high tide and the furniture was loaded into wagons and drawn to the Hall.

Six generations of the Upcher Family have already lived at "Sheringham Hall." During the past eighty-five years an intermittent correspondence has been carried on between the Upshurs in Virginia and the Upchers at "Sheringham Hall." A letter dated February 24, 1937, from the late Miss Caroline Edith Sparke Upcher extends a cordial invitation to the author to visit "Sheringham Hall" which she describes ". . . this beloved and

---

[232] For Upcher lineage, *Burke's Landed Gentry* (London, 1937 issue), 2311-12; 10*n*.

SHERINGHAM HALL, NORFOLK, ENGLAND

An early nineteenth-century home of the Upcher Family

beautiful home, both inside and out . . . many large and spacious rooms . . . wonderful setting with park and woods and sea . . . mile drive of lovely rhododendrons and cedars . . ." It is hoped that members of the Upshur Family who visit England will call at "Sheringham Hall" and meet their English cousins.

Note II

UPCHER COAT OF ARMS[233]

Arms Argent, on a chevron azure, between three foxes' heads erased, gules, as many pears slipped Or.

Crest On a wreath Argent and gules a plume of five ostrich feathers alternately Argent and Or, before them a Unicorn's head couped azure, gorged with a ducal coronet Or.

Motto Præstat Opes Sapientia.

The arms and crest were assigned by patent dated February 18, 1777, to Peter Upcher of Sudbury, Suffolk County, England, only surviving child and heir of Abbot Upcher, Clerk in Holy Orders, Rector of St. Gregory's and St. Peter's in that town, by Mary, his wife, daughter and co-heir of John Foxwell, Clerk, Rector of Rattlesden, Suffolk County, by Bridget, his wife, daughter and co-heir of John Brownrigg of Willisham in the said county. Abbot Upcher was the eldest son and heir of Peter Upcher of Sudbury, a Justice of the Peace for Suffolk, by Susan, his wife, daughter and heir of Charles Abbot of Sudbury, and grandson of Robert Upcher, sometime of Colchester and afterwards of Wormingford, Essex County.

The arms and crest were to be used by the aforesaid Peter Upcher and by the descendants of his grandfather, Peter Upcher. The motto was not assigned but was probably adopted by the Peter Upcher to whom the arms and crest were granted.

In order that a right to this coat of arms may be recognized by the College of Arms, London, it is necessary to enter in the books

---

[233] Howard and Crisp, *Visitations of England and Wales*, III, 25; *Burke's Landed Gentry* (London, 1937 issue), 2311-12.

at the Herald's Office a pedigree showing descent from one of the ancestors specified in the patent. Thus, if the laws of heraldry were strictly complied with, descendants of Arthur Upcher, the immigrant, would not use this coat of arms because this ancestor was born at least two generations before the earliest Upcher mentioned in the grant of arms. However, since both the English and Virginia branches of the family presumably had a common ancestor as late as 1600, and as the most useful purpose of heraldry today is the identification of family and alliances, the use of these arms by the Upshur Family in Virginia should be encouraged.

A letter dated May 1936 from Miss Caroline Edith Sparke Upcher of "Sheringham Hall" to the author explains that the foxes' heads used in the arms came from Mary Foxwell, Peter Upcher's mother. It is not known why the other charges and heraldic devices were assigned but their description and meaning as generally used follows:

Unicorn The heraldic unicorn has the body of a horse, the legs of a stag, the tail of a lion, a fine mane, a single horn springing from its forehead, and often tufts of hair under its chin. The horn was regarded as a sovereign cure for many dire diseases, and a grand antidote against all poisons. The unicorn was first used in England by James I, and is used as a charge, a crest, and a supporter. It is almost invariably white or silver, and is usually armed and unguled of gold.

Ostrich Feathers The use of the ostrich and ostrich feathers can be traced back to the time of the Crusades when returning crusaders brought this symbol from the East. The ostrich was a symbol of endurance and martial ardor. The middle feather is usually shown curling forward while the others are shorter and curve forward and outward.

Ducal Coronet The ducal coronet is a charge very commonly used in heraldry upon the necks of birds and animals. Such

birds and animals are said to be ducally gorged. The coronet also forms part of many crests, the heads of birds and animals issuing from it. The heraldic ducal coronet has no reference to ducal or any other rank, and is usually represented as a chased circle heightened by four strawberry leaves, three of which are shown.

Pears Pears are often emblazoned on English and French coats of arms. Fruit when slipped is represented as having a stalk.

Foxes Foxes are commonly used as charges. The fox is an emblem of cunning, deceit, and rapacity.

In the Parish of Ormesby St. Michael, and in Sheringham Parish, both of Norfolk County, England, are tablets on the walls of the chancels showing a quartering of the Upcher arms with those of the Abbot Family of Colchester, Essex County.[234]

In 1867 Rear-Admiral John Henry Upshur went to England in command of the *U.S.S. Canandaigo*. According to his son, the late George Lyttleton Upshur, the Admiral visited the Upchers of "Sheringham Hall" and determined a common ancestor. Later, the Admiral designed a somewhat new coat of arms by changing the colors in the Upcher arms, then quartered with the Abbot Family, and registered the revised arms in his name at the Herald's Office. The author has been unable to verify this registration. At any rate, the Admiral and several members of the Upshur Family in Virginia have used the new arms which are emblazoned:

Arms Quarterly; first and fourth Argent, on a chevron azure between three foxes' heads erased gules as many pears slipped Or; second and third gules a chevron Or between three pears of the second.

Crest On a wreath Argent and azure a plume of five ostrich

---

[234] Edmund Farrer, *The Church Heraldry of Norfolk* (Norwich, 1887-93), I, 340, II, 440-41.

feathers alternately azure and Or before them a unicorn's head couped Argent gorged with a ducal coronet gules.

Motto Præstat Opes Sapientia.

According to Admiral Upshur the charges in the revised arms symbolize incidents associated with the Upshur Family in Virginia. The pears represent "Pear Plain," the home of Littleton Upshur II in Northampton County. The foxes' heads symbolize the noble sacrifice of Rachel (Revell) Upshur who was bitten by a mad fox at "Warwick" and later died of hydrophobia.

The original Upcher coat of arms has been used for several generations by various members of the Upshur Family in Virginia, and the author recommends its continued use in preference to the revised arms designed by the Admiral.

Note III

WARWICK

By patent dated September 28, 1664, Arthur Upshur I was granted 2000 acres of land in Matchipungo Neck on the seaside of Accomack County between Matchipungo River on the west and Upshur's Bay on the east.[235] Soon this tract became known as Upshur's Neck and it is so called today. About 1674 Arthur I completed the manor house for this plantation which became known as "Warwick" after Warwick County, England, the original home of his last wife, Mary (Clarke) Hamond-Jacob-Upshur.[236]

Five generations of the Upshur Family had lived at "Warwick" before it was burned by the British during the Revolutionary War. Arthur Upshur IV, then owner of "Warwick," was an officer in a company of Minute Men on a mission with his command watching for the enemy to land from Chincoteague Bay, farther up the coast. When information was received that the British had put into Upshur's Bay and had taken possession of "Warwick," Arthur IV and his men hastened south to attack. Upon reaching "Warwick" they opened fire upon the British who were reembarking in their barges. Arthur's wife then informed him that nothing had been harmed, and that the British only wished to fill their water casks and buy some meat. Suspecting that the British would return for vengeance, Arthur IV removed all his valuables during the remainder of the day and night. Early the next morning the British returned in force,

---

[235] See 39*n*, 40*n*, and related text.

[236] See 17*n* and related text. It is an interesting fact that many of the colonial family seats on the Eastern Shore of Virginia, and several on the Eastern Shore of Maryland have been connected with the Upshur Family, viz., "Warwick," "Rose Cottage," "Cedar Grove," "Brownsville," "Vaucluse," "Pear Plain," "Kendall Grove," "Eyre Hall," "Arlington," "Beverly," "Wye House," and numerous others. Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim.*

burned the house and outbuildings, and carried away everything of value that remained.

The present house is part brick and part frame; in the former part, the bricks are laid in Flemish bond with glazed headers, and the top course of the water table is of the early beveled-brick type. It is undoubtedly very old as indicated by its seventeenth-century architectural characteristics which support the tradition that Arthur Upshur IV rebuilt "Warwick" at the close of the Revolutionary War, and incorporated into his new house that part of the older dwelling which survived the fire. Moreover, when "Warwick" was restored in 1927 by the late Ralph T. Whitelaw, it was necessary to remove all the original shell lime plaster from the walls of one room on the first floor of the old brick section. Charred door lintels were discovered at that time in the center on the front and back walls, thus furnishing mute evidence of the traditional fire, and showing that originally this part had entrances at the front and rear. The frame part of the present house was probably added after the fire, and the interior woodwork both there and in the brick part are correct for that period.[237]

Arthur Upshur I, his last wife, and many descendants were buried at "Warwick." All the tombstone inscriptions are still very legible.

Every member of the Upshur Family owes a debt of gratitude to the late Ralph T. Whitelaw for his careful restoration of "Warwick," thus preserving the oldest known home of the Upshur Family in America. The Upshur Family is also indebted to the present owners, Mr. and Mrs. Richard Hollerith, for maintaining "Warwick" in a high state of preservation, and for the interest they have shown and the care they have given to the house and grounds.

---

[237] Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 581-7.

Note IV

RACHEL (REVELL) UPSHUR'S TRAGIC DEATH

This is the story of Rachel's death that has been handed down in the family from generation to generation: On a bleak December night in 1749, Abel Upshur I was aroused from sleep by the squawking of hens in the nearby fowl house. He climbed out of bed and hurried out into the yard to investigate the disturbance. It was a cold night and Abel had not been well. Rachel being concerned about his health slipped a robe over her nightdress and went out to beg Abel to return. She found her husband standing near the fowl house, and he told her that he had been unable to discover anything unusual although the fowls seemed much frightened. Together they returned to their doorstep where Rachel, standing in her bare feet, gently pushed Abel into the house with the admonition that he should not stay out another minute lest he catch his death of cold. Rachel paused a moment on the mill stone at the foot of the steps; hearing no further disturbance she turned to follow Abel into the house. At that instant a red fox affected with rabies came from under the steps and bit Rachel on the heel. Nine days later she was seized with hydrophobia and died soon thereafter on Christmas night, being smothered to death between two feather beds, an old time precaution which was taken to guard against those so affected.

Still at "Warwick" is the old mill stone on which Rachel stood when bitten by the fox. The mill stone continues to bear out the legend for although the stone is solid gray in dry weather, when it rains or when water is poured upon the stone, a splotch of red shows where her wound is said to have bled upon it.

NOTE V

THE BRAVERY OF ELIZABETH (UPSHUR) TEACKLE

Of Thomas Teackle III of "Craddock," Accomack County, and his wife, Elizabeth (Upshur) Teackle, this story has been handed down in the family from generation to generation: During the Revolutionary War Thomas Teackle III was serving as Captain of a troop of horse. He returned to his home, "Craddock," to visit his wife and newborn daughter, Margaret, who was later to become the wife of Thomas Lyttleton Savage.[238] A British barge had come up Nandua Creek, and one of the officers and several men had come ashore and forcibly entered the house. They found Mrs. Teackle in bed with her infant. The officer demanded that she reveal the hiding place of her husband who, according to the information they had received, was secreted in the house. Seizing the baby the officer drew his sword and said he would kill the infant if Mrs. Teackle refused to tell. "You have the power to kill, Sir, and can abuse it if you will," she replied. "I would not reveal to you the whereabouts of my husband if I knew, to save either my own life or that of my child." Handing back the infant he said, "Madam, if the men of the Colonies were all as brave as you, we could never conquer." "You will never conquer anyhow, Sir," she replied. The mother and child were removed to the weaving house and the mansion was set afire. In the meantime, Thomas had escaped, gathered his troops, and returned in time to drive off the British, but not in time to save his home which was destroyed by fire.[239]

---

[238] See 104*n*.

[239] Earle, *The Chesapeake Bay Country*, 456; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, 644-5.

The house burned by the British in 1778 was perhaps the home of the Reverend Thomas Teackle.[240] The present "Craddock" was built following the fire.

240 See 83*n*.

NOTE VI

CONCERNING ARTHUR UPSHUR IV (1726-84)

At a meeting of the First Continental Congress in Philadelphia on September 5, 1774, a stringent Continental Association was formed forbidding the colonies to import British goods after December 1, 1774, or to export American goods after September 10, 1775. This Congress directed the appointment of Committees of Safety in each town and county with inquisitorial and punitive powers to carry out these provisions. The following account of the violation of these provisions by Arthur Upshur IV was extracted from the minutes of the Accomack and Northampton County Committees:[241]

Accomack County Committee

At a meeting of the Committee of Accomack County, at the Court House, October 2, 1775: It having been represented to this Committee, at a former meeting, that Arthur Upshaw [Upshur], of this County, Gentleman, and a member of the Committee, had sent out a vessel, loaded with grain, for the West Indies, since the 10th of last month, contrary to the Resolves of the Continental Association; this day the said Upshaw sent a letter by his son, acknowledging the notice, and confessing that his said vessel had sailed since the 10th of last month. And upon reading and considering the said letter, and hearing several witnesses upon oath, it appears that the said Upshaw has been some months past forwarding the said vessel for sea; that he cleared her out the 20th of July last for the British West Indies, with grain, long before she was finished; that by sickness of his workmen afterwards, and other unexpected delays, he found he could not get her ready time enough, but that he was determined, at all events, she should sail; that after the 10th of last month, and before she did sail, sundry of the inhabitants of this County (one of them a Member of this Committee) waited on him, and cautioned him against sending out his vessel, as a step exceedingly disagreeable to the people; that he promised that company she should not sail till the Committee met, and he would wait on them. A day being

---

241 Force, *American Archives* (Washington, 1840), 4th ser., III, 935; *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 15(1907-8), 157-9.

accordingly appointed, sundry Members met, but not a sufficient number to form a Committee; that the said Upshaw having that day attended, according to promise, said he expected his vessel was then sailed, as he had given his master orders to sail the first fair wind.

Resolved, unanimously, that the said Upshaw, by sending out the said vessel, has violated the Continental Association, and that his case be published in the Virginia Gazette, agreeable to the Resolve of the Eleventh Article of the said Association.

Accomack County Committee
8th January 1776.

Mr. Arthur Upshur of this County, Gentleman, who was formerly ordered by this Committee to be published for his conduct in sending out a vessel after the 10th of September last, contrary to the Continental Association, this day appeared and voluntarily submitted his case to this Committee, and promised to abide by the determination thereof, but denied that he had violated the Association intentionally, for as much as he understood by the said Association that he was not restrained from sending his vessel to any foreign Port. On taking his case into the most serious deliberate and mature consideration, it is the opinion of this Committee that he violated the Association ignorantly, but that he has since behaved very obstinate and ill in the affair, and therefore for his said offense, Resolved that he pay a fine of one hundred pounds in the space of thirty days into the hands of the Chairman of this Committee, to be disposed of as this Committee shall see proper.

Northampton County Committe
March 13, 1776.

An inhabitant of this County having applied to the Committee to know whether he might purchase a quantity of Salt from Mr. Arthur Upshur, who was published by the Committee of Accomack for a breach of the Association. Upon mature deliberation Resolved unanimously, That whereas a Certificate from the Committee of Accomack of the 8th of January has been produced to this Committee, which admits "that he violated the Association ignorantly" and the members of this Committee who have been long acquainted with the said Upshur, who is a free holder and possessed of a very considerable property in this Country, having observed him in every instance except the above a warm friend of the liberties of America, and a strict adherer to the Continental Association, and a man of general good Character, are of the opinion that he transgressed through ignorance, and therefore upon considering these circumstances, do Permit the

Inhabitants of this County to purchase the said Salt and trade with the said Upshur for his crops, etc. in this Country as usual.

Northampton County Committe
May 14, 1776.

Resolved that no Permit be granted to any Inhabitant of Accomack, or any other County, to carry grain or any other Commodity from hence, without first obtaining a Certificate from the Committee of such County permitting such person to proceed with his or their Vessel to this County for the purposes aforesaid.

Mr. Upshur of Accomack made application to the Committee for a permit for his sloop little Lady, Esau Kellum, Master, to proceed to one of the foreign Tobacco, under the late order of Congress respecting Trade, which the Committee refused granting, having previously come to the above Resolution.

May 20th

Ordered that the Clerk grant a Permit to Mr. Arthur Upshur of Accomack for his sloop little Lady, Esau Kellum, Master, to proceed to one of the foreign West Indies Islands under the order of Congress, and that he take a Bond for the true performance of the said regulations of Congress respecting trade: It appearing to the Committee that the said vessel was actually loaded in this County, without having come immediately from Accomack.

Note VII

VAUCLUSE[242]

In 1768 Arthur Upshur IV purchased a 550-acre tract of land on Hungars Creek at the southern end of Church Neck, Northampton County, which, about 1779, he gave to his son, Littleton Upshur I. When this tract was resurveyed in 1812 it was found to contain 758 acres. Since the days of Littleton I the plantation has been called "Vaucluse," but no one now knows the reason for this name.

The little quarter kitchen with one brick end may antedate Littleton's ownership, but the brick-end section of the main house between the two chimneys was probably built by him during 1780-84. The adjoining section is believed to have been built about 1829 during the ownership of his son, Judge Abel Parker Upshur I, for when the house was restored and modernized many years later by George Upshur Pope, the following pencil inscription was found on the inside of one of the baseboards: "Angelo A. Townsend—Painter of this Building June 19, 1829." It is this date which gives the clue to the period of additions and alterations made by Judge Upshur.

From about 1790 to 1840 "Vaucluse" was one of the principal seats of culture and learning on the Eastern Shore. Following the death of Littleton Upshur I in 1811, his son, Judge Upshur, later Secretary of the Navy and Secretary of State, became possessed of the plantation, and did much to improve it and enlarge the mansion. Here he entertained, as had his father, many prominent men of Virginia and Washington, including members of President Tyler's Cabinet.

---

[242] Earle, *The Chesapeake Bay Country*, 466-75; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 414-20.

In 1866 an article on "Vaucluse" by "Fanny Fielding"[243] appeared in *The Land We Love*. Several paragraphs follow:

"Vaucluse" was the homestead of the Northampton branch of "the Upshur family," who, according to the historian of "39," or thereabout, had lived upon the Eastern Shore two hundred years, cultivating the soil and adorning society. It was built by the father of Judge Upshur, but was subsequently much enlarged and improved by the latter, is situated on Hungar's Creek, about three miles from its mouth, and was, in the years not so very long agone, the lovliest spot in all that beautiful wave-girdled garden, the Eastern Shore of Virginia.

The "Vaucluse" house was of that sometime popular outline indicated by the letter "L," the shorter portion of the letter projecting front on the left hand; this formed a chain of pantries, butler's closets, storerooms, culminating in the kitchen, the special domain of old black Phebe, queen of cooks, whom, in my mind's eye I see, as in the days of yore, presiding with her "slice" scepter in hand.

At the extreme right of the dwelling was the study, or office, its books upon books within, its climbing rose without, and the interval between this and the other extreme of the house a succession of vine-clad porches, transept windows peeping through floral and leafy curtains, green turf and shrub and flowering tree. I see, how plainly! the open entrance hall or passage with its paper in gray wreath paneling, bordered in the old style with rich, crimson, full-blown roses, with their half-opened buds and deep-green leaves in velvet paper. I see the broad stairway, easy of ascent, and on the left hand, entering, the dining room further on upon the same side, its paper of cerulean blue, with carpet to match, and upon its walls, facing each other, the portraits of two, lovely and pleasant in their lives, two devoted friends, Commander George P. Upshur and William Kennon, U.S.N. The former breathed out his last day on duty in Spezzia, but his remains were gathered unto his fathers in the "Vaucluse" burial ground.

On the right hand front, opened the parlor, and this again into an apartment of like size, the library, by way of distinction, but then, parlor, chambers, halls, all were libraries here. I see heavy folios, ponderous tomes of history and science.

---

[243] See 194*n* and related text; "Fanny Fielding," born Mary Jane Stith Upshur (Mrs. Josiah R. Sturges), "Vaucluse," *The Land We Love* (Charlotte, N. C., 1866-69), I, 410-16. See also, Dorothy Holroyd, *Upshur Hall or The Power of Influence* (Philadelphia, 1884), for a light novel concerning the Upshur Family and connections on the Eastern Shore of Virginia. "Upshur Hall" was probably the author's name for "Vaucluse." Only known available copy is in the Library of Congress.

I see poetry and all the arts represented, and read, as of old, within the cover the familiar printed label

Abel P. Upshur
Virginia
Legere et non intelligere perdere opus

Out by the back porches with their twining coral woodbine and white jessamine, the former, in warm weather, invariably the resort of those tantalizing humming birds. Out upon the lovely garden breathing its odors of a thousand flowers, for a view of the beautiful sheet of water in front and extending far away to the right hand, into Chesapeake Bay. In the same direction, approached by an ornamental gateway, leading from the garden, is Little Neck Point, with its orchard grass and superb oaks presenting to view a very English-looking pleasure ground. Away down on the "Point" stands a rustic seat under a clump of holly and oaks, and on some of the former are carved the names of the ladies and their lovers, family names and those of visitors.

Judge Upshur was living at "Vaucluse" in 1824 when he wrote the following poem to Mary Vaughn (Wilson) Upshur, the wife of his elder brother, Littleton Upshur II, who lived on an adjoining plantation, "Pear Plain." The poem indicates that "Vaucluse" was in a "run down" condition in 1824 and that Judge Upshur was trying to do something about it.

Vaucluse Wednesday night[244]

To breakfast? and on buckwheat cakes?
The offer much my purpose shakes.
It is a bread I dearly love,
As many hearty breakfasts prove;
And well I could my duty pay,
To such a feast three times a day.
But yet, 'tis fit I stay at home
At least 'til dinner time be come,
And—howsoe'er unkind it looks,
Eat my poor viands with the Rooks.

[244] Copied from the original poem in the collection of Quinby Papers, Alderman Library, U. Va.

Would you know why? I'll tell it you,
I have a world of things to do,
To patch and botch and piece and mend,
Through rags and rubbish without end.
Hear you my story 'tis not long,
But brief and wretched, like my song.

The chickens scratch up all my peas;
The cattle wander where they please,
The Turkies, more unkind than these
Have peck'd my cabbage to the ground,
Til scarce a plant of it is found.
The ducks that trespass'd ne'r before,
Waddle around my parlour door,
And ever, with their noisy din
Disturb the peace of those within.
The lambs leap o'er my garden wall,
The hogs know no restraint at all;
Just take their circuit round the shore,
And pop! I have them at my door!
They'll make, if longer they go loose,
An Irish cabin of Vaucluse,
Where cow and pig and Pat and Jude
Huddle together in the mud,
Until 'twere difficult to scan,
Which is the beast and which the man.

Hapless! o'er whom this fate prevails!!
And all for want of garden pales!
Well, I will stay and nail them on;
I'll teach these shameless beasts to shun
The ground held sacred in my care
For gallant Knight and Lady fair
And as I ply the hammer well
Will boast that *on the head I hit the nail.*

But yet at dinner be you sure
I'll do my part, and something more
Then ask me not, I pray again
Why I can't breakfast at Pear Plain
The reason is I think quite clear
Because *j'ai d'autres choses à faire*

Farewell, and with all reverence due,
Thy humble servant

A. P. U.

March 24
1824.

Mrs. Mary V. Upshur

The present owners of "Vaucluse," Mr. and Mrs. Verne E. Minich, maintain the house and grounds in beautiful condition. Again the old plantation is the scene of gracious hospitality and once more has become one of the show places of the Eastern Shore.

Note VIII

JUDGE ABEL PARKER UPSHUR I[245]
(1790-1844)

Judge Abel Parker Upshur I, son of Littleton I and Ann (Parker) Upshur, was born June 17, 1790, at "Vaucluse," Northampton County, Virginia. His father was one of the outstanding citizens of that county, and his mother was a member of the socially prominent Parker Family of the Eastern Shore. Abel was one of nine children who grew up in the beautiful and cultural environment of "Vaucluse."

When Abel was fourteen he and his brother, Arthur Brown Upshur, entered Yale, and their names appear in the Register of 1805 as members of the junior class. They did not finish their studies at Yale but left in 1806 to enter Princeton. In 1807, as a member of the graduating class, Abel was one of a group of students expelled for insubordination. The following year he began the study of law in Richmond in the office of the distinguished barrister, William Wirt, at which time his friend, John Tyler, future President of the United States, was studying law in the office of Edmund Randolph. The author has the original letter from Wirt introducing Abel to Mr. Henry Thompson of Baltimore. The letter is quoted below:

Richmond, November 6th, 1810

Dear Sir:

The object of this is to introduce to your acquaintance and recommend to your friendship, the bearer, Mr. Abel P. Upshur, a young gentleman who has read

---

[245] For best published articles about Judge Abel Parker Upshur I, see the following: Samuel Flagg Bemis, ed., *The American Secretaries of State and Their Diplomacy* (New York, 1928), I, 67-124; *Branch Historical Papers of Randolph Macon College,* 1 (1901-04), 188-205; Henry A. Wise, *Seven Decades of the Union* (Phila., 1881), 194-227; *Dictionary of American Biography* (New York, 1936), XIX, 127-8; Lyon Gardiner Tyler, *Letters and Times of the Tylers* (Richmond, 1884-5), I, II, *passim.* See also Tucker Papers in the Archives of Colonial Williamsburg, and Claude H. Hall's thesis on Abel Parker Upshur in the Alderman Library, U. Va.

law with me and who wishes to establish himself in the practice of law in Baltimore.

Whatever can be effected by an understanding of superior order, by solid and correct acquirements, by indefatigable zeal and application, combined with one of the sweetest tempers and gentlest and purest hearts, will, I think, be effected by Mr. Upshur. His family is one of the most respected in this State—his manners, you will at once perceive, are those of the polished and engaging gentleman—and his whole character one of the most amiable I have ever known. His parts are rather solid than brilliant, and therefore although he may not strike at once I am persuaded that he will never lose an inch of ground that he gained.

I beg you to make him known to the gentlemen of his profession and the circle of your acquaintances, and I can confidently promise you that he will grace and do honor to any introduction you may be pleased to give him.

Mrs. W. begs her respects, and I am dear Sir, your obedient servant

Wm. Wirt

Whether or not young Upshur delivered the letter is not known. He went to Baltimore but returned to Richmond shortly thereafter. In 1810 he was admitted to the bar and practiced law in Richmond until 1824.

In 1812 Abel began his political career in the Virginia Assembly as Representative from Northampton County for one term. In 1816 he was elected Commonwealth Attorney for Richmond and served in that office until he resigned in 1823. In 1824 he returned to "Vaucluse" and soon thereafter was again elected to the Assembly from Northampton. In 1826 he was appointed a Judge of the General Court of Virginia, succeeding his uncle, Judge George Parker.

In 1829 Judge Upshur was made a member of the famous State Constitutional Convention of 1829-30. He played an important role in that convention which included such men as John Marshall, James Madison, James Monroe, John Randolph, and John Tyler. After the reorganization of the Virginia judicial system, Abel was again appointed a Judge of the General Court of Virginia. During this time he bought "Bassett Hall" in

Williamsburg for his home. It is said that Abel's friend, Vice-President Tyler, was visiting him at "Bassett Hall" when word came of the death of President Harrison. When Tyler was inaugurated as President he called Upshur to Washington as his Secretary of the Navy. On June 24, 1843, Upshur was appointed Secretary of State to succeed Daniel Webster.

On February 28, 1844, Secretary Upshur was aboard the *U. S. S. Princeton* in the Potomac River in company with President Tyler and other members of the Cabinet to witness the experimental firing of a newly developed cannon. The *Princeton* had proceeded down the Potomac below Mount Vernon and was returning to Washington, the experimental firing having been successfully completed and the exhibition of the day over. At about four o'clock in the afternoon it was decided to fire the experimental cannon, "The Peacemaker," once again. The gun exploded upon firing, killing Secretary Upshur, the Secretary of the Navy, Commodore Kennon, and several other persons. The death of Abel Parker Upshur at the age of fifty-four cut short the life of a man who had already made a large contribution to his community, state, and nation. He had served as member of the Virginia Legislature, Judge, member of the Virginia Constitutional Convention of 1829-30, member of the Board of Visitors of the College of William and Mary, Secretary of the Navy, and Secretary of State. His memory has been honored in many ways; a county in West Virginia and a county in Texas were named in his honor, as also were two U. S. destroyers.

There are three known portraits of Judge Upshur; one painted in the summer of 1842 by Sarah M. Peale was presented to the Maryland Historical Society in 1896 by James T. Ringgold, another by A. G. Heaton hangs in the State Department Building in Washington, and a handsome portrait by Edith Stevenson Wright is owned by the author. The two latter portraits were painted from a lithograph made about 1843. In a letter dated

November 2, 1843, to Judge Beverly Tucker of Williamsburg, Judge Upshur wrote that he was sending Tucker a lithograph print of his head and bust, and added, "It is an excellent likeness, but Susan [his daughter] says it makes me look too old."

Rear-Admiral John Henry Upshur
(1823-1917)
He sailed with Commodore Perry to open the ports of Japan

Note IX

REAR-ADMIRAL JOHN HENRY UPSHUR[246] (1823-1917)

John Henry Upshur, son of John E. Nottingham and Elizabeth Parker (Upshur) Nottingham, was born December 5, 1823, in Northampton County, perhaps at "Selma," near Eastville. Following the death of his father, his mother had John Henry's surname and that of his brother, George, changed in 1841 from Nottingham to Upshur by act of the Virginia Assembly.

Upshur was a student at the College of William and Mary during 1837-40, and in 1841 entered the U. S. Navy as Midshipman. During 1843-46 he cruised in the *U. S. S. St. Mary's* in which he joined the Atlantic Squadron in the Gulf of Mexico at the time of the Mexican War. He served in the naval battery at the bombardment of Vera Cruz in March 1847. After the fall of that city he returned to the United States to enter the Naval School, later to become the U. S. Naval Academy, where he was a member of the class of 1847. His uncle, Commander George Parker Upshur, was Superintendent of the Naval Academy at that time.

John Henry Upshur was promoted to Master in July 1855, and served aboard the *U. S. S. Cumberland* off the coast of Africa to suppress the slave trade during 1858-59. Later he became an Instructor at the Naval Academy. When the Civil War began he was assigned to the North Atlantic Blockading Squadron, and participated in the capture of the forts at Hatteras Inlet and in the sounds of North Carolina during 1861. Although a native

---

246 *The National Cyclopedia of American Biography* (New York, 1893), IV, 316; *Appleton's Cyclopedia of American Biography*, VI, 214; *Dictionary of American Biography*, XIX, 128; Upshur, *As I Recall Them, passim*; "Arlington and Mount Vernon, 1856," *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 57(1949), 140-75.

Virginian, Upshur strongly and sincerely believed that his first duty was to the Union.

He was Executive Officer of the *U. S. S. Wabash* at the capture of Port Royal, and commanded four boats in Commander Rodger's expedition in the inland waters in the vicinity of Port Royal and Beaufort, South Carolina. He commanded the *U. S. S. Flambeau* of the South Atlantic Blockading Squadron during 1862-63 in operations off the coast of South Carolina.

In July 1862 he was promoted to Lieutenant Commander, and during 1863-64 served aboard the *U. S. S. Minnesota* of the North Atlantic Blockading Squadron. He commanded the *U. S. S. Frolic* during 1864-65, taking part in both engagements at Fort Fisher. He served in the Mediterranean during 1865-67, was promoted to Commander in July 1866, to Captain in January 1872, and served as member of the Naval Board of Inspection during 1877-80. Following this tour of duty he took a leave of absence and visited England and Europe. Upon his return he became a member of the Naval Board of Examiners.

He served as Commandant of the Brooklyn Navy Yard during 1882-84. He was promoted to Rear Admiral in 1884 and appointed Commander-in-Chief of the Pacific Station. In June 1885 he was voluntarily placed on the retired list.

Rear-Admiral Upshur died May 30, 1917, and was buried in Arlington National Cemetery. At the time of his death he was the senior Rear Admiral of the Navy, and the last surviving officer of Commodore Perry's historic expedition to Japan in 1853. Admiral Upshur's record as a sailorman placed him among the most valued of his profession, and his loyalty to the flag endeared him to his country. He died at the age of ninety-four in full possession of his faculties. He was an earnest Christian, a noble gentleman, and was loved and respected by all who knew him.

NOTE X

ROSE COTTAGE[247]

By the will of Abel Upshur I,[248] his youngest son, Caleb Upshur, was bequeathed a plantation of about 800 acres in Bradford's Neck, Accomack County. This plantation was about seven miles north of "Warwick," between the towns of Watchapreague and Locustville, just off the seaside road. It was the same plantation that Abel I purchased shortly before his death from William Burton III. On this plantation, facing a small creek, now called Finney Creek, and not far from the Atlantic Ocean, "Rose Cottage" was built more than 175 years ago.

"Rose Cottage" is characteristic of the type popularly built on the Eastern Shore of Virginia during the period preceding the Revolutionary War, and its construction indicates that it must have grown with the family who lived there. The main house is of brick, laid in Flemish bond with glazed headers, and the top course of the water table has the old beveled-brick treatment. The door and window lintels are of wood. The little house with its high gable roof and small dormer windows has unusually nice lines. A central hall runs through the house from the road side to the creek side, dividing the ground floor into a parlor and dining room. Parlor, cross hall, and dining room all have wainscoting. The mantel in the parlor is exceptionally good; the dining room mantel is plain. Upstairs are two bedrooms, each of which has a fireplace. Additions to the south end of the main section are of a somewhat later date.

"Rose Cottage" has a lovely setting by the water. According to the records the grounds were laid off in symmetrical gardens which sloped down to the creek. However, of the old garden

---

247 For description of "Rose Cottage," record of various owners and land transactions, see Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, II, 862-65.

248 See 106*n* and related text.

there remains but one box, and no trace of the roses which gave the dwelling its name.

Records fail to show that there were any buildings on the plantation when it was purchased by Abel Upshur I, so it is probable that "Rose Cottage" was built by his son, Caleb, who inherited the plantation in 1753. Caleb married about 1770 and it is reasonable to suppose that he built "Rose Cottage" prior to that date.

The provisions of a deed of sale to "Rose Cottage," recorded January 1, 1842, indicate that members of the Upshur Family were buried here, however, no Upshur tombstones have been found on the property. The deed also indicates that "Rose Cottage" once had a formal garden. A part of the deed is quoted below:[249]

> . . . a certain piece of land in the upper ends of the lower square of the garden, which has been and is now the burying ground of said Upshur's family—Forty-six feet from north to south and thirty feet from east to west which with the right of way to and from the same for purposes of burial—which is not hereby intended to be conveyed but reserved as aforesaid to said Wm Upshur, his heirs and assigns for the purpose aforesaid.
>
> January 1, 1842

By reconstructing the gardens from the above record it is possible to locate the Upshur burying grounds. Several marked graves of the Bunting and Finney Families, who later became possessed of the property, are now located in the section which was probably the lower end of the upper square of the garden, on the same side of the middle walk as the unmarked Upshur graves.

Caleb's son and heir, John Brown Upshur, inherited "Rose Garden," and upon his death in 1822, the property descended to his widow and children. The widow and minor children deeded their share to the eldest son, William Stith Upshur, mentioned in the deed quoted above, and William sold to Edward J. Young.

---

[249] Accomack Deeds, 1842-43, 59.

Thus another old Upshur property passed out of the family. When the author visited "Rose Cottage" in June 1936, he made a careful inspection of the dwelling which was fast falling into a state of ruin. Negro tenants were living in the kitchen wing. Upstairs in the main section, on the chimney side of the north bedroom, several marked bricks were discovered. All were not decipherable but the names "Caleb" and "Upshur" were identified. These bricks may have been marked by Caleb Upshur or, more likely, by his children or grandchildren. In the late summer of 1936 a severe storm blew down the north end of "Rose Cottage." When the author again visited the old house during the winter of 1939, he looked in vain for the marked bricks amidst the wreckage of the old north wall.

Subsequent owners have restored "Rose Cottage." The present owners, Mr. and Mrs. Paul Q. Quay, have done much to improve the property and maintain it in beautiful condition.

NOTE XI

ANCESTRY OF MARY ELIZABETH STITH

Mary ("Molly") Elizabeth Stith, born September 7, 1786, died July 2, 1851, married (bond dated May 11, 1802)[250] John Brown Upshur I of "Rose Cottage," born about 1776, died October 1822. As of interest to numerous descendants of this couple, several ancestral lines of Mary Elizabeth Stith follow:

DESCENT FROM MAJOR JOHN STITH[251]

1. Major John Stith immigrated to Virginia before 1656, settled in Charles City County.
2. Lt.-Col. Drury Stith (d. 1741) m. Susanna, dau. of Lancelot Bathurst of New Kent County, son of Sir Edward Bathurst of Gloucester County, Eng. Drury Stith had a brother, Capt. John Stith, m. Mary, dau. of William and Mary (Isham) Randolph of Turkey Island, Va., parents of the Rev. William Stith, historian and early President of the College of William and Mary.
3. Lt.-Col. Drury Stith (*ca.* 1695-1740) m. Elizabeth, dau. of Maj. William Buckner (d. 1716) of Yorktown.
4. Griffin Stith (1720-84) m. Mary (b. 1726/7), dau. of William Blaikley (d. 1736) and Catherine (Kaidyce) Blaikley (1698-1771) of James City County. Griffin Stith was Clerk of the Northampton County Court 1743-83.
5. William Stith (d. 1794), Clerk of the Northampton County Court, m. Sarah, dau. of Isaac Smith II (1734-1813) and Elizabeth Custis (Teackle) Smith (1742-1822).
6. Mary Elizabeth Stith (1786-1851) m. John Brown Upshur I (*ca.* 1776-1822) of "Rose Cottage."

DESCENT FROM ISAAC SMITH I[252]

1. Isaac Smith I (d. 1760) of E. S. Va., m. Sarah, youngest dau. of Maj. John

---

[250] Stratton Nottingham, *The Marriage License Bonds of Northampton County, Virginia, from 1706-1754* (Onancock, Va., 1929), 100.

[251] For Stith lineage, *Wm. and Mary Quar.*, 1st ser., 21(1912-13), 181-93, 269-78; *ibid.*, 1st ser., 22(1914), 44-51; Upshur, *Sir George Yardley*, 29-30.

[252] For Smith lineage, Upshur, *Sir George Yardley*, ch. 4; *Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 58(1950), 396-403; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; Smith, "Smith, Teackle, Upshur Families"; Upshur, MSS.

West (the Younger) and Frances (Yardley) West, dau. of Capt. Argoll Yardley II and Sarah (Michael) Yardley.

2. Isaac Smith II (1734-1813) of Northampton County m. Elizabeth Custis Teackle (1742-1822), dau. of Thomas Teackle II (1711-69) and Elizabeth (Custis) Teackle (b. 1718), dau. of Thomas Custis (*ca.* 1685-1721) of "Deep Creek" and Anne (Kendall) Custis, dau. of Capt. William Kendall II (1659-96) and Ann (Mason) Kendall. Isaac II and Elizabeth first lived in Accomack County, then at "Moratico Hall" on the Rappahannock River, and then at "Selma," near Eastville.
3. Sarah Smith m. William Stith (d. 1794).
4. Mary Elizabeth Stith (1786-1851) m. John Brown Upshur I (*ca.* 1776-1822) of "Rose Cottage."

Descent from the Reverand Thomas Teackle[253]

1. Rev. Thomas Teackle (1624-1695/6), born in Gloucester County, Eng., settled on the E. S. Va. prior to 1653. He m. 2d, Margaret, dau. of Robert Nelson of "Gray's Inn," London, and Mary (Temple) Nelson, dau. of Sir John Temple and Dorothy (Lee) Temple, dau. of Edmund Lee.
2. Maj. John Teackle (1693-1721) of "Craddock," Accomack County, m. Susanna (b. *ca.* 1693), dau. of Arthur Upshur II (*ca.* 1654-1738) and Sarah (Browne) Upshur.
3. Thomas Teackle II (1711-69) of "Craddock" m. Elizabeth Custis (b. 1718).
4. Elizabeth Custis Teackle (1742-1822) m. Isaac Smith II (1734-1813).
5. Sarah Smith m. William Stith (d. 1794).
6. Mary Elizabeth Stith (1786-1851) m. John Brown Upshur I (*ca.* 1776-1822) of "Rose Cottage."

Descent from John Custis I[254]

1. John Custis I (b. *ca.* 1599), Englishman, is believed to have immigrated to the E. S. Va. about 1650, m. Joane Powell.
2. Thomas Custis (b. *ca.* 1628) of Baltimore, Ireland, brother of Maj.-Gen. John Custis II (*ca.* 1630-1695/6) of "Arlington," Northampton County, E. S. Va. immigrant.

---

[253] For Teackle lineage, see 83*n*.

[254] For Custis, Scarburgh, Whittington, and Smart lineages, Harrison, *Harrison, Waples and Allied Families*; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*. See also 90*n*.

3. Edmund Custis (*ca.* 1650-1701) of "Deep Creek," Accomack County, was brought to the E. S. Va. by his uncle, Maj.-Gen. John Custis II. Edmund m. Tabitha Scarburgh Whittington, dau. of Col. William and Tabitha Scarburgh (Smart) Whittington.

4. Thomas Custis (*ca.* 1685-1721) of "Deep Creek" m. 2d, Anne, dau. of Capt. William Kendall II (1659-96) and Ann (Mason) Kendall.

5. Elizabeth Custis (b. 1718) m. Thomas Teackle II (1711-69) of "Craddock."

6. Elizabeth Custis Teackle (1742-1822) m. Isaac Smith II (1734-1813).

7. Sarah Smith m. William Stith (d. 1794).

8. Mary Elizabeth Stith (1786-1851) m. John Brown Upshur I (*ca.* 1776-1822) of "Rose Cottage."

Descent from Sir George Yardley[255]

1. Sir George Yardley (1588-1627), Knt., Gov., and Capt. Gen. of Virginia, was born in Southwark, Eng. He left England for Virginia in 1609 on the *Sea Adventure*, was shipwrecked off Bermuda, but finally arrived at Jamestown on the *Deliverance* in 1610. In 1619, during his term as Governor, he summoned the First Legislative Assembly in America at Jamestown. He died there in 1627, and it is believed that he was buried in the so-called Knight's Tomb in the old Jamestown Church. Sir George m. Temperance Flowerdew who descended from an ancient and distinguished family. She came to Jamestown on the *Falcon* in 1609. She survived Sir George and m. 2d, Capt. Francis West, brother of Lord De la Warr. She had no issue by her second husband.

2. Col. Argoll Yardley I (1621-55) was born at Jamestown, m. 2d, Ann, dau. of John Custis I (b. *ca.* 1599), and settled on the E. S. Va. His son, below, is believed to be a child by his first wife (name unknown).

3. Capt. Argoll Yardley II (d. 1682) of Northampton County m. Sarah, dau. of Capt. John Michael (*ca.* 1625-78) and Elizabeth (Thorogood) Michael, dau. of Capt. Adam Thorogood (1603-40) of Norfolk County, Eng., and Sarah (Offley) Thorogood (bap. 1609).

4. Frances Yardley m. Maj. John West (the Younger) (d. 1718/19), son of Lt.-Col. John West (1638/9-1703) and Matilda (Scarburgh) West, dau.

---

[255] For Yardley lineage, Upshur, *Sir George Yardley*; Captain J. H. R. Yardley, *Before the Mayflower* (New York, 1931). For Michael, Thorogood, West, Offley, and Osborne lineages, Harrison, *Harrison, Waples and Allied Families; Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 58(1950), 396-403; Upshur, MSS; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; Smith, "Smith, Teackle, Upshur Families."

of Col. Edmund Scarburgh II (1617-71). Lt.-Col. John West was son of Anthony West (*ca.* 1600-52) who immigrated to Jamestown in 1622 on the *James*.

5. Sarah West m. Isaac Smith I (d. 1760).
6. Isaac Smith II (1734-1813) m. Elizabeth Custis Teackle (1742-1822).
7. Sarah Smith m. William Stith (d. 1794).
8. Mary Elizabeth Stith (1786-1851) m. John Brown Upshur I (*ca.* 1776-1822) of "Rose Cottage."

Descent from Captain Edmund Scarburgh I[256]

1. Capt. Edmund Scarburgh I (*ca.* 1584-*ca.* 1635) emigrated from England to the E. S. Va. before 1629. He served in the Virginia House of Burgesses for several years, and was one of the first Commissioners for the Plantacon of Acchawmacke in 1632. He m. Hannah, dau. of Robert Butler.
2. Col. Edmund Scarburgh II (1617-71) was bap. at St. Martin-in-the-Fields, London. It is believed that he was left in England for his education and that he immigrated to the E. S. Va. when he learned of his father's death. He became one of the most important men in the Colony of Virginia and held many offices including those of Surveyor Gen. of Virginia, Speaker of the House of Burgesses, and Commander-in-Chief of all the Inhabitants of the E. S. Va. His wife's name was Mary but her parentage has never been definitely determined.
3. Tabitha Scarburgh (b. 1640) m. 1st, John Smart, born in Bristol, Eng., 2d, Devereaux Browne, 3d, Maj.-Gen. John Custis II, 4th, Col. Edward Hill of "Shirley," Charles City County.
4. Tabitha Scarburgh Smart m. Col. William Whittington (*ca.* 1653-1719/20), son of Capt. William and Elizabeth (Weston) Whittington of Northampton County. Col. Whittington was a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses for several years.
5. Tabitha Scarburgh Whittington m. Edmund Custis (*ca.* 1650-1701) of "Deep Creek."
6. Thomas Custis (*ca.* 1685-1721) of "Deep Creek" m. 2d, Anne, dau. of Capt. William Kendall II (1659-96) and Ann (Mason) Kendall.
7. Elizabeth Custis (b. 1718) m. Thomas Teackle II (1711-69) of "Craddock."

---

[256] For Scarburgh, Smart, Whittington, and Custis lineages, Harrison, *Harrison, Waples and Allied Families*; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim.* See also 85*n*, 90*n*.

8. Elizabeth Custis Teackle (1742-1822) m. Isaac Smith II (1734-1813).
9. Sarah Smith m. William Stith (d. 1794).
10. Mary Elizabeth Stith (1786-1851) m. John Brown Upshur I (*ca.* 1776-1822) of "Rose Cottage."

Descent from Captain Adam Thorogood[257]

1. Capt. Adam Thorogood (1603-40) immigrated to Virginia on the *Charles* in 1621. He m. Sarah Offley (bap. 1609), dau. of Robert Offley and Anne (Osborne) Offley, dau. of Sir Edward Osborne, Knt., and Lord Mayor of London in 1582. Capt. Thorogood was one of the principal figures in the history of Virginia during the seventeenth century, and he named Norfolk, Va., after Norfolk, Eng.
2. Elizabeth Thorogood m. Capt. John Michael (*ca.* 1625-78). Capt. Michael immigrated to Virginia and settled on the E. S. Va. He was a prominent colonist and a man of wealth. He served as a Commissioner for Northampton County, and a Justice of the Peace in 1665 and subsequent years.
3. Sarah Michael m. Capt. Argoll Yardley II (d. 1682).
4. Frances Yardley m. Maj. John West (the Younger) (d. 1718/19).
5. Sarah West m. Isaac Smith I (d. 1760).
6. Isaac Smith II (1734-1813) m. Elizabeth Custis Teackle (1742-1822).
7. Sarah Smith m. William Stith (d. 1794).
8. Mary Elizabeth Stith (1786-1851) m. John Brown Upshur I (*ca.* 1776-1822) of "Rose Cottage."

---

[257] For Thorogood, Michael, Offley, and Osborne lineages, Harrison, *Harrison, Waples and Allied Families*; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; Upshur, *Sir George Yardley.*

NOTE XII

BROWNSVILLE

The plantation which has been known for generations as "Brownsville"[258] is located on the seaside of Northampton County, two miles east of the present town of Nassawadox. The original patent for this land was issued in 1652 to John Browne. The patent was for 1000 acres but was reissued three years later as 1262 acres. In his will probated March 15, 1655/6, John Browne left his son, Thomas, "the plantacon where I now dwell att Nuswattocks," and to his son, John, the seaboard land containing 1262 acres. There is no record of the death of young John but in 1662 his brother, Thomas, became possessed of the 1262-acre seaside tract.

Thomas Browne was a highly respected citizen, although a devout Quaker, for in spite of the persecution of that sect his affirmation was accepted in court instead of his oath. He married Susanna Denwood by whom he had several children. In his will probated in 1705, Thomas Browne left his 1262-acre seaside plantation to his daughters, Sarah and Anne. Anne, who inherited the southern half comprising 631 acres, married, first, Joseph Preeson, second, Andrew Hamilton. Anne and Andrew moved to Philadelphia where their son, James, became Mayor of that city and later Acting Governor of Pennsylvania. Sarah, who inherited the northern half comprising 631 acres, married Arthur Upshur II.

Sarah (Browne) Upshur and her husband, Arthur Upshur II, deeded their part of the plantation in 1734 to their son, Thomas Upshur, who went there to make his home. From 1734 to the present time this land has remained in the Upshur family and

---

[258] For description of "Brownsville," Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore*, I, 469-73; Robert A. Lancaster, *Historic Virginia Homes and Churches* (Phila., 1915), 486-8; Meade, *Old Churches, Ministers, and Families of Virginia*, I, 255.

is one of the few tracts on the Eastern Shore which has been in continuous possession of the descendants of the original patentee.

John Upshur, great grandson of Arthur Upshur II, inherited the northern half of the seaside tract in 1793 and in 1823 purchased the southern half of the tract, thus reuniting the tract first patented in 1652 by his great-great-great grandfather, John Browne.

The house has always been called "Brownsville." The brick portion was built by John Upshur in 1806 at a cost of $10,000, a large sum of money at that time. As originally designed, the three-story house was spacious, nevertheless, because of the many relatives who lived with him, John is reported to have said, "there is no place to put the sole of my foot." So in 1809 he instructed the contractor to build the frame part. There are sixteen rooms in the house exclusive of the cellar and garret. The walls of the brick portion are twenty-one inches thick and the water table has a top course of convex molded brick.

The cross hall is at the south end of the dwelling and both entrances have double doors. Originally there was the customary small porch at each entrance but the one at the east was destroyed in a storm years ago and has not been replaced. Each entrance had a somewhat rare Chinese Chippendale railing, and the handsomely carved outside door frames are similar to those in the parlor. Under the eaves is a decoration of paired modillions separated by a dogwood flower carved in a square frame.

The hall is wide and has a graceful arch and stair well extending to the third floor. The first floor has exceptionally fine woodwork, ornamented by hand carving and applied plaster designs. In the parlor are seventeen different decorative motifs which combine to produce an unusually handsome trim.

Among the heirlooms in the house is a silver-headed cane which, according to tradition, was given to Arthur Upshur I by his father when he made a voyage back to England. This cane was

exhibited in the World's Columbian Exposition of 1893 as the oldest cane in the United States. It has always been handed down to the eldest male in the Brownsville branch of the family.

"Brownsville Old Hall" stood a few feet east of the kitchen of the present house. Originally it had one brick end in which there was a brick dated 1691; this brick end was demolished when the house was moved in 1898 to another part of the property. There were two rooms on each floor, and in one room there was a large cooking fireplace with a bake oven beside it.

Between the main house and a branch of the creek was a formal box garden, one section of which was devoted to the growing of roses for making rose-water. The still used for that purpose is yet in existence. Near the house is a burying ground where several generations of the Upshur Family are buried.[259] "Brownsville" has much of the atmosphere of olden times; with a flock of sheep usually seen grazing on the large and shady lawn it has the air of an old English manor house.

---

[259] Other burying grounds of particular interest to the Upshur Family are located at "Warwick," "Vaucluse," "Eyre Hall," "Fairview," and "Bull Farm" on the E. S. Va.; also at "Beverly," near Pocomoke, Md. However, these are but a few of the places on the Eastern Shore where there are marked graves of members of the Upshur and allied families.

NOTE XIII

ANCESTRY OF ANNE STOCKLEY

Anne Stockley, born 1739, died October 22, 1817, married (bond dated January 29, 1761)[260] Thomas Upshur II of "Brownsville," born July 2, 1739, died December 19, 1792. As of interest to numerous descendants of this couple, several ancestral lines of Anne Stockley follow:

DESCENT FROM JOHN STOCKLEY[261]

1. John Stockley (d. *ca.* 1673) of Accomack County, son or brother of Francis Stockley I (d. 1656) of Northampton County, m. Elizabeth whose parentage has not been determined.
2. Francis Stockley II (d. 1698), wife Sarah.
3. Francis Stockley III (d. 1741) m. Elizabeth Eyre, dau. of John (d. 1719) and Elizabeth (Tilney) Eyre.
4. Eyre Stockley (d. 1740) m. Mary Bell (d. 1784), dau. of Nathaniel Bell (1689-1745/6) and Mary Scarburgh (West) Bell (b. 1691).
5. Anne Stockley (1739-1817) m. Thomas Upshur II (1739-92) of "Brownsville."

DESCENT FROM ANTHONY WEST[262]

1. Anthony West (*ca.* 1600-52), wife Anne, immigrated to Virginia on the *James* in 1622. Genealogists believe that he was the same Anthony West who was on the E. S. Va. as early as 1649, and who died there in 1652.
2. Lt.-Col. John West (*ca.* 1638-1703) of Accomack County m. Matilda Scarburgh, dau. of Col. Edmund Scarburgh II (1617-71).
3. Anthony West (d. *ca.* 1717) m. Elizabeth Rowles.
4. Mary Scarburgh West (b. 1691) m. Nathaniel Bell (1689-1745/6).
5. Mary Bell (d. 1784) m. Eyre Stockley (d. 1740).

---

[260] Nottingham, *The Marriage License Bonds of Northampton County, Virginia, from 1706-1754*, 100.

[261] For Stockley lineage, see 216*n*.

[262] For West lineage, Harrison, *Harrison, Waples and Allied Families*; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim; Va. Mag. of Hist.*, 58(1950), 396-403; Johnston, *Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Maryland*, plate II, 22; Upshur, MSS; Smith, "Smith, Teackle, Upshur Families."

6. Anne Stockley (1739-1817) m. Thomas Upshur II (1739-92) of "Brownsville."

Descent from Thomas Bell I[263]

1. Thomas Bell I (*ca.* 1618-1678) emigrated from Gravesend, Eng., to Virginia on the *Thomas* and *John* in 1635 at the age of seventeen and settled on the E. S. Va. (According to Thomas Teackle Upshur II).
2. Robert Bell (d. 1724) m. Mary Cutting, sister of William Cutting (d 1704).
3. Nathaniel Bell (1689-1745/6), brother of Thomas Bell (d. *ca.* 1768),[264] m. Mary Scarburgh West (b. 1691), dau. of Anthony (d. *ca.* 1717) and Elizabeth (Rowles) West.
4. Mary Bell (d. 1784) m. Eyre Stockley (d. 1740).
5. Anne Stockley (1739-1817) m. Thomas Upshur II (1739-92) of "Brownsville."

Descent from Thomas Eyre I[265]

1. Thomas Eyre I (d. 1657), E. S. Va. immigrant, m. 1st, Susannah Baker.
2. John Eyre (d. 1719), brother of Thomas Eyre II (d. 1715),[266] m. Elizabeth Tilney, dau. of Lt.-Col. John Tilney and Ann (Hinman) Tilney, dau. of Richard Hinman. (According to Thomas Teackle Upshur II).
3. Elizabeth Eyre m. Francis Stockley III (d. 1741).
4. Eyre Stockley (d. 1740) m. Mary Bell (d. 1784).
5. Anne Stockley (1739-1817) m. Thomas Upshur II (1739-92) of "Brownsville."

---

263 For Bell lineage, Nottingham, *Wills and Administrations, Accomack County, Virginia, 1663-1800*; Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; Johnston, *Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Maryland*, plate II, 22.

264 See 211*n*.

265 For Eyre lineage, Whitelaw, *Virginia's Eastern Shore, passim*; Johnston, *Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Maryland*, plate II, 22; Upshur, MSS; Smith, "Smith, Teackle, Upshur Families."

266 See 118*n*.

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

GENEALOGICAL NOTES

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

Genealogical Notes

INDEX

A

Abbot, Charles 148; John 8
Acchawmacke, Plantacon of, vii, 3, 177
Adams, Louise 121
Addison, Edward Magruder Tutwiler 99; Edward Magruder Tutwiler, Jr. 99; Margaret Tutwiler 99
Agnew, Catherine 90; Denwood 90
Ake, Frank 89
Alexander, Ann (Stratton) 32
Allen, Samuel Hawes 117
Allston, Arabella K. 59
Ames, Warren 51
Andrews, Dr. 110; Anne M. 110; Rev. Christopher Columbus 120; Rev. Edward Quarterman 120; Elizabeth 69; Isham 120; Elizabeth 69; Isham 120; Jacob 74; Julia Estelle 120, 121; Margaret (Joynes) 74; Micajah 120; Sarah 74; Lt.-Col. William 69
Arbuckle, Anne 25
Arlington 28, 41, 152, 175
Aspen Grove 113
Ault, Margaret Esther (Upshur) 125; Robert Bowen 125; Cdr. William Bowen 124; William Upshur 125
Austin, Dr. Sidney C. 110
Avon 142
Ayre, Anne 4, 145; Robert 4

B

Bagge, William 39
Bagwell, Adah 54; Anne 77; Catherine 47; Gen. Edmund R. 47; Henry 47; Thomas P. 47
Baker, Benjamin Allen 139; Caroline Upshur 139; David Worrel 138; Elizabeth Fontaine 139; Henry Ball 138; Henry Ball, Jr. 138; Henry Ball III 138; Rob Owen 139; Susanna 29, 44, 183; Thomas Upshur 139
Balderston, Lydia 46
Ball, Harrison 141
Barclay, Catherine 120; Esther 120
Barlow, Mr. 66; Horace Littleton 66
Barnes, Agnes (Johnson) 32; Thomas L. 122
Barnett, Sallie Clare 117
Bassett Hall 166, 167
Bathurst, Sir Edward 174; Lancelot 174; Susanna 174
Bauer, Ethel Lucille 121; George Fred 121; Louise (Adams) 121
Bayly, Ann (Drummond) 94; Anne Upshur 95; Catharine K. 100; Edmund 57, 86, 87, 94, 100; Elizabeth Upshur 95; Esther Burton Parramore 57, James Upshur 57, 95; John Hill 95; Rachel (Upshur) 87; Richard 57; Richard D. 100; Sarah Upshur 100; Thomas 57; Thomas Upshur 95
Beach, Norman Trow 99
Beasley, Elizabeth 120
Beckford 34, 68
Bell, Mary 130, 182, 183; Mary Scarburgh (West) 130, 182; Nathaniel 130, 182, 183; Robert 128, 183; Sarah 128, 130, 144; Thomas 128, 183; Thomas I 128, 183; William 130
Benson, Elizabeth Peterkin 76; Frances Day 76; George Jarvis 76; John Upshur 76
Berkeley, Sir William 11
Beverly 33, 94, 152, 181
Billups, Roberta Constance 97
Blades, Robert 14
Blaikley, Catherine (Kaidyee) 174; Mary 174; William 174
Blanding, Caroline DeSaussure 134, 135; Col. James Douglas 134; Lenora Agnes (McFaddin) 134
Boisnard, Dr. John 35
Bordley, Isabella (Egerton) 69
Boudouin, Pierre 36, 51
Bounds, Jessie 137
Bowdoin, Arthur 51; Charles Teackle 52; Charles Teackle II 52; Elizabeth 52; Frances 35; Grace 35; James 36; John

Bowdoin (*continued*)
35, 51; Laura A. (Upshur) 51; Lloyd 51; Mary 51; Nannie Steele 51; Peter 29, 36, 51; Severn Eyre 51; Susanna 28; Virginia Upshur 51
Bowdoin Farm 51
Bowman, Maj. Edmund 27; Sarah 27
Bowman's Folly 27, 88
Boyer, Ann (Hayward) 93; Dr. Francis A. 93; Sophie Hough 93
Bradford's Neck 102, 106, 171
Bralley, David Macdonald 138; Richard Blanding 138; Stephen Wilson 138; Woodrow Wilson 138
Branchester 56
Bickerhoff, Rev. Raymond 76
Brickhouse, Columbia 58; Elam L. 58; Elizabeth P. (Fitchett) 58
Brickhouse Neck 58
Brittingham, Charlotte 99
Broad Creek 9, 10, 65
Broad Creek Plantation 13
Brockwell, Dr. Raymond H. 60
Brown, Rev. Alexander Gustavus 80; Dr. Alexander Gustavus, Jr. 80; Dr. Alexander Gustavus III 81; Anne 102, 104, 106, 132; Fannie (Cooksey) 80; Frances (Fowke) 80; Dr. Gustavus 80; Margaret Upshur 80; William 16
Browne, Anne 22, 179; Devereaux 177; John 21, 179, 180; Sarah 21, 22, 27, 28, 31, 128, 175, 179; Susanna (Denwood) 21, 22; Thomas 21, 22, 179; Ursula 21
Brownrigg, John 148
Brownsville (*illustration*) 128, ix, 22, 23, 24, 31, 35, 36, 43, 48, 65, 106, 128, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 138, 141, 143, 152, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183
Brownsville Creek 131
Brownsville Old Hall 181
Buckner, Elizabeth 174; Maj. William 174
Bull, DeSaussure 136
Bull Farm 69, 181
Bunting Farm 52
Burton, Agnes 31; Ann (Stratton) 32; Capt. William 31, 32; William III 37, 171
Bush Hill 95
Butler, Hannah 26, 177; Robert 177

C

Carneal, Mary 64
Carpenter, Anthony 8; Elizabeth G. 67; John 67; Lucy (Gault) 67
Carter, Benjamin Franklin 63; Martha Custis (Williams) 79; Peyton Franklin 63; Adm. Samuel P. 79; Thomas Barton French 63
Cary, Mary Conway 64
Caserta 72
Castleman, Hortense 50
Cedar Cottage 125
Cedar Grove (*illustration*) 85, 9, 10, 11, 13, 20, 22, 31, 32, 73, 86, 87, 88, 93, 94, 96, 104, 152
Cessford 101
Chandler, Mary Eliza 67; Roger 67
Charlton, Mary 26
Cheatham, Donald Marvin 119; Emma (Llewellyn) 119; Helen Upshur 119; Rev. Henry C. 119; Laurel Jean 119; Richard 119
Cherry Hall 58
Chew, Lillian 82
Chincoteague Bay 152
Christian, Lawrence Lottier 62; Michael 88; Robert S. 62; Robert S. Jr. 62; Rose (Powell) 88; Susanna 88
Church Creek 9, 65
Church Neck 40, 53, 55, 111, 160
Church Neck Plantation 42
Churn, Mary 57
Clarke, Dr. George 9; Mary 6, 8, 9, 11, 20, 23, 152
Clement, Walter Thomas 118; Walter Thomas, Jr. 118
Cocke, Elizabeth (Kennon) 111; John Hartwell 110; Mary Kennon, 111
Cockerill, Anne Fauntleroy 137; Charles Overton 137; Thomas Upshur 138; William Horace 137; William Horace, Jr. 137
Combs, Virginia Meals 124
Conrad, Barnaby 83; Barnaby, Jr. 83; William Hunt 83
Cooksey, Fannie 80
Copland, Alfred G. 98; Jane Harrison 98; Mary (Ruffin) 98
Corbell Farm 114
Corotoman River 5
Covington, George W. 91; Prof. Harry F. 91
Cox, Betsy 136
Craddock 25, 34, 35, 57, 130, 132, 141, 142, 155, 156, 175, 176, 177
Craighead, John Peter 77

Cropper, Kate A. 57; Sabra 143; Thomas 143
Crowder, Susan Caroline 97; Victoria Adelaide (Moore) 97; Rev. William Robert 97
Cruzat, Lelia 126
Curts, Holroyd 123; Marjorie Huntting 123
Custis, Ann 176; Ann (Upshur) 105; Anne 43; Anne (Kendall) 25, 35, 41, 43, 175; Anne (Upshur) 28, 29; Betty 28, 29; Daniel Parke 41, 79; Edmund 28, 176, 177; Elizabeth 25, 28, 35, 41, 43, 175, 176, 177; Elizabeth (Custis) 28; Hancock 28, 30; Col. Henry 40, 41, 43; Maj. John 28, 29, 105; John I 28, 175, 176; Maj.-Gen. John II 28, 41, 175, 176, 177; Col. John III 28, 29, 40; John IV 41; Leah 40, 41, 43, 53; Margaret 25; Margaret (Michael) 28, 40; Martha (Dandridge) 79, 127; Sarah M. 101; Sorrowful Margaret 29; Susanna 28, 30, 105; Tabitha Scarburgh 41; Thomas 25, 28, 29, 35, 41, 175, 176, 177
Cutting, Jane 21; Mary 21, 128, 183; William 128, 183

D

Dandridge, Martha 41, 79, 127
Danforth, Dorothy 93
Dashiell, Elizabeth 94; Emily (Irving) 141; Rev. John H. 141; William Handy 141
Davis, Cornelius Hampton 117; Maria L. 60; Nancy Barnett 117; Sallie Clare (Barnett) 117
Dawley, Amey 113
Dawson, Cary LeRoy 117; Elizabeth Lawrence (Deane) 117; Sarah Frances 117
Deane, Elizabeth Lawrence 117
Deep Creek 25, 28, 29, 35, 41, 105, 175, 176, 177
de Hoyos, Debora 110; Luis 109; Luis Warren 109; Rose Marie 110
De la Warr, Lord 176
Dennis, Anne 9; Anne Emmerson 94; Charlotte 143; Donnock 33; Elinor (Jackson) 68; Elizabeth 34, 46; Elizabeth (Upshur) 87, 88; Elizabeth W. 34, 68; Ellen Rebecca 89; Emily 89; Hon. Dr. George Robertson 88; George Robertson, Jr. 89; Henry 33, 94; Henry Teackle 94; James 33, 89, 94; James Upshur 89; John 33; Hon. John 34, 68; John Upshur 88, 94; Littleton 33, 34, 53, 68, 87, 88, 93; Littleton Upshur 94; Margaret Wilson 89;
Dennis *(continued)*
Maria Elizabeth (Robertson) 88; Rosina Upshur 88; Sarah 34; Susanna (Upshur) 68, 93; William Upshur 88
Dennis Plantation 33, 94
Denwood, Liveing 21; Mary, Sr. 21; Mary (Cutting) 21; Susanna 21, 179
Despres, Dora 61
de Upsal, Geoffrey 146
de Upsale, Richard 146
Dick, Anne Floyd 137; Esther Macdonald 138; John Ashby 137
Digges, Lucy 74
Dolby, Ann (Upshur) 16, 18; Benjamin 16, 17, 18; John 16; Margery 16; Thomas 15
Downing, Margaret 86, 95; Zerobabel 86
Dowrigg, Susanna 7
Drewry, Volina Gray 65
Drummond, Ann 57, 94; John 94
Dunton, Alexander 57; Arnithia 111; George W. 111; James S. 57; John 57; Mary (Churn) 57; Mary Ellen 111

E

Edgehill 83
Egerton, Isabella 69
Elkington 74, 78
Elliott, Anne Douglas 121; David Upshur 121; David Upshur, Jr. 121; John T. 65, 132; Margaret Lee 121; Martha Jane (Oliver) 121; Mary Upshur 121; Roy 121; Samuel 121
Elliott's Neck 65
Ellis, Martha Harriet 140
Emmerson, Ann 34, 85, 87, 93, 94; Anne 85; Rev. Arthur 85
End View 86
Essex 22, 31, 131
Etheridge, Sallie 122
Evans, Charles Graham 47; David Wilkinson 100; John Kitson 58; Margaret (Jacob) 58; Margaret Upshur 58; Mary Wilson 59; Sallie 58; Thomas 58; Thomas Edward 58; Judge Thomas Edward 58; Upshur 58
Evergreen 143
Eyre, Ann M. 45; Ann (Upshur) 44, 45; Elizabeth 130, 182, 183; Elizabeth (Tilney) 182; John 44, 45, 46, 86, 130, 182, 183; Littleton 44; Margaret 71; Severn 44; Susanna (Baker) 29, 44; Thomas I 44, 183; Thomas II 44, 183
Eyre Hall 44, 45, 152, 181

F

Fairfax, Emily Cary 75
Fairview 143, 181
Faulcon, Elizabeth Ann 111, 125; John 111; Mary Kennon (Cocke) 111
Federal Island 87
Fielding, Fanny 54, 109, 161
Finney, Abel 27; Andrew 27; Arthur 27; Betty 28; Dr. Edward B. 51; Elizabeth 30; Ethel 51; John 107; Sarah 27; William 28
Finney Creek 171
Fisher, Dr. Thomas 94; Thomas, Jr. 130
Fitchett, Elizabeth P. 58
Flowerdew, Temperance 176
Fowke, Frances 80
Foxwell, Bridget 148; John 148; Mary 149
Franklin, Edgar 47; Hon. John R. 91; Sarah Emmaline 90
French, Bessie 63; Col. Thomas Barton 63
Freshwater, Thomas 3

G

Garland, Col. David 41, 95; John 42
Garnett, Judge Theodore S. 52
Gascoigne, Henry 129; Sarah 129
Gault, Lucy 67
George, Betty 110
Glasscock, Blanche 124
Glazebrook, Martha 106
Godwin, Agnes 113; Ann (Stoakley) 113; Anna Henderson (Upshur) 116; Edmund S. 57; James Edwin 113; James Hunter 112; Leonard F. 57; Marian 57; Mary 58; Robert Sydney 116; Rosy P. (Mears) 57
Goode, Maj. William 126
Gore, Daniel 43; Elizabeth 43, 44, 48, 107, 131, 132; Maximillian 43; William 43
Goshen Farm 58
Graeff, Elizabeth Ann 135; James Thomas 135; Reginald Evans 135; Susannah 120
Graham, Capt. William 141
Gray, Col. Elmore Beach 119
Great Otterdams Branch 10
Green, Herbert Fletcher 97
Greenville 87
Gregory, Arthur 59; Dr. William W. 59

H

Hack, Ann 43, 143; Ann Q. S. 143; Anne (Custis) 43; Cave Jones 143; John
Hack *(continued)*
William 143; Melinda Upshur 143; Peter 43; Col. Peter 143; Dr. Peter Thomas Upshur 143; Sallie Brown Upshur 143
Hack's Neck 43
Hale, Robert Claiborne 48
Hall, Rev. Joseph 67
Hamilton, Andrew 22, 179; Anne (Brown) 179; James 22, 179
Hamond, Anne (Dennis) 9; Edward 9, 10; Mark 9; Mary (Clarke) 6, 8, 11, 12, 20, 23, 152
Handy, Margaret (Ker) 140; Sallie Brown Upshur 133; Rev. William Collins 133; William W. 133
Hanes, Judith 113
Hardwige, Mary 7, 8, 14, 20
Harmanson, Bridget 44; Gertrude 44
Harmar, Ann (Southy) 25
Harrison, President 167
Harsha, Claire 81; Sarah (Hockenhull) 81; William Justin 81
Hartree, Elias 21; Jane (Cutting) 21
Harvey, Irving Bremond 61; Irving G. 61
Hays, Catherine 142
Hayward, Ann 93
Heaton, A. G. 167
Hemphill, Lula Belle 47; W. A. 47
Henderson, Anna Parker 78; Christine Michael 78; Dr. John Michael 77; John Walston 77; Marietta Claiborne 77
Hill, Col. Edward 177; Ivy Ruth 81; K. 105; Richard 94; Stella Lenore (Secrest) 81; Walter Augustus 81
Hilliard, Mary 67
Hills Farm 57, 94, 100
Hinman, Ann 183; Richard 183
Hockenhull, Sarah 81
Holland, Florence Rowena 98; Frances 78; Louisa Jane 94
Hollerith, Mr. and Mrs. Richard 153
Holloway, Katherine 92
Hooper, Arthur Upshur 92; Bernard 92; Bessie Upshur 92; Harwood 92; Helen 92; James Albert 92; Katherine 92; Katherine (Holloway) 92; Rachel 92; Robert Holloway 92; Susan Upshur 92; Upshur 92; William Upshur 92
Hopkinson, Judge Francis 133; Maria 133, 142
Howard, Maj. Charles 101
Hudgins, Jean Dudley 119
Hughes, Martha 124

Hungars Creek 7, 55, 160
Hungars Plantation 42
Hunt, Elizabeth Augusta (Ridgely) 83; Elizabeth Ridgely 83; Gertrude Livingston 83; Helen Upshur 83; William Henry 83; Judge William Henry 83; William Henry, Jr. 83

I

Indian Field 60
Inge, Carra 93
Ingleside 78, 142
Irving, Emily 141; Judge Levin Thomas Handy 140; Margaret 140; Dr. Thomas Handy 140
Isham, Mary 174

J

Jackson, Elinor 34, 68; Henry 34, 68; Penelope 122; Sallie (Etheridge) 122; William Anderson 122
Jacob, Margaret 58; Mary 9; Mary (Clarke) 6, 9, 10, 11, 20, 23, 152; Philip 9, 10; Priscilla 9; Richard 9, 10, 18; Sarah 9; William 9
Jacob Plantation 9, 10
Jarvis, Kendall 91; Kendall Addison 78
Jennys, Grace May 117
Johns, Roger 7
Johnson, Agnes 32; Jacob Lee 97; Jacob Lee, Jr. 97
Johnston, Ellen Rebecca 88; Emily Upshur 89; George Upshur 89; Henry 60; Hobart 89; Margaret Wilson 89; Rosina Martin 89; Dr. Samuel 89; Sarah 89; Susan Upshur 89; Upshur 89; William Wilson 88
Joiner, Mary 7
Jones, Anne 144; Barney Lee 123; Rev. Barney Lee, Jr. 123; Rev. Cave 144; Denwood 89; Lydia 144; Mary 7; Roy Bradley 123; Stella Parker 123; Walter Curts 123
Joynes, John T. R. 100; Louisa Ann Smith 88; Margaret 74; Thomas R. 88
Justice, Joice Gore, 25, 34; Ralph 34

K

Kaidyee, Catherine 174
Kearney, Agnes (Maxwell) 79; Gen. Philip 79
Keeling, John P. 117
Kegotank 34, 46
Kellam, Dr. Esler 96; Col. Thomas Hatton 143
Kellum, Esau 159
Kelly, William H. 60
Kendall, Ann (Mason) 41, 175, 176, 177; Anne 25, 35, 41, 43, 175, 176, 177; Col. Custis 29; Mary 85; William 29, 30; Col. William I 11, 29, 85; Capt. William II 29, 41, 175, 176, 177; William III 29
Kendall Grove 54, 71, 152
Kennon, Elizabeth 111; William 161, 167
Ker, Alice Yerby 78; Ann Elizabeth (Yerby) 78; Dr. George 101; Hugh 78; Margaret 140
Kerrigan, Florence Ann 98
Key, Francis Scott 101
Kilby, Judith Elizabeth 106; Martha (Glazebrook) 106; Thomas Jefferson 105; Turpin 106
Kinnie, Marean Moore 110
Klein, Elizabeth 120
Knox, Nelson Rulison 83; Nelson Rulison, Jr. 83; Peter Gaillard 84; Robert Bost, Jr. 121
Kraft, Mary Ann 99

L

Lafayette River 113
Lafferranderie, Angelina 126; Antoine Gustave 126; Lelia (Cruzat) 126
Lake Kilby 105
Lambert, Eleanor Leola 139
Leaman, Bruce Young 119; Cleland Eby 119
Lee, Dorothy 24, 175; Edmund 24, 175; Elizabeth Mallory 77; Hancock 85; Col. Richard 85; Gen. Robert Edward 77
Lee's Neck 33, 85, 86, 87
Lewers, Hon. Charles Allen 59; Lula Safon 59
Lewis, John P. 60
Little Neck Point 162
Littleton, Ann (Southy) 25; Elizabeth 26; Esther 25; Mary 26; Col. Nathaniel 25, 27; Sarah 33; Col. Southy 26, 27, 33
Llewellyn, Emma 119
Lloyd, Anne Steele 50; Arthur Upshur 50; Daniel 50; Edward 50; Gov. Edward 50; Edward I 50; Edward V 50; Sally Scott (Murray) 50; Upshur 50
London, Haskell Brooks 97
Lottier, Lawrence 61; Lillie 61
Love, Augustus 93; Margaret Henrietta 93

Lovell, Abby Francis 67; Anna 67; Cornelius 67; George 67; Mary (Hilliard) 67; Robert 67
Luker, Luke 88; Rose 88; Susanna (Christian) 88
Lumley, James Rutherford 78; James Rutherford, Jr. 78

Mc

McAllister, Amelie 77
McFaddin, Frances Adelaide (Spiers) 134; Capt. James Dickey 134; Lenora Agnes 134
McIndoe, Joseph 60; Louis Upshur 60; Louise 60; Mary Randolph 60

M

Macon, Arabella K. (Allston) 59; Dr. Henry J. 59; Mittie 59
Madigan, James Patrick 61; John Henry 61; John Henry, Jr. 61; Mary Susan 61; Sharon Anne 61
Madison, James 166
Mahone, Robert Joseph 59
Major, Lucretia Ann 96
Mallet, Capt. A. B. 65; Millicent 65
Manner Plantation 40, 42, 53
Mapp, G. Walter 47; John Alfred 97
Marsh, George 11
Marshall, John 166
Martin, Caroline Payne 135; Florence (Watkins) 135; Col. James 135; Dr. John C. 88; Rose (Luker) 88; Susanna Christian 88
Marumsco Creek 21
Mason, Ann 29, 41, 175, 176, 177
Massie, Alexander 14; Col. Eugene C. 80; James Pleasants 80; Kate Roy 80; Margaret Brown 80; Col. Thomas 80
Matchipungo 10
Matchipungo Bay 44
Matchipungo Neck 152
Matchipungo River 21, 22, 36, 44, 152
Matomkin Plantation 40
Mattawoman Creek 7, 71
Maury, Anne 75; Matthew Fontaine 75
Maxwell, Agnes 79
Mayo, Agnes 71; Anna 71; Anne 56; George 71; John 57; Joseph 56, 71; Leah Custis (Upshur) 71; Littleton 71; Peter Poythress 56, 71; William 71; Maj. William 56; Wynne 57
Meacham, William Shands 125
Mears, Arthur Wainhouse Downing 98; Arthur Wainhouse Downing, Jr. 99; Dr. and Mrs. Burleigh N. 98; Corinne Holland 99; Florence Rowena (Holland) 98; Jewel Whitaker 98; Otho Frederick 98; Rosy P. 57
Melson, Jack Fisher 100; Jack Fisher, Jr. 100; Larry Upshur 100
Melville 111
Merton 65, 131
Messongo Creek 14
Meteer, Emma 76
Michael, Elizabeth (Thorogood) 41, 88, 176; Capt. John 41, 88, 176, 178; Margaret 28, 40, 86; Margaret (Downing) 86, 95; Sarah 88, 175, 176, 178; William Wainhouse 86
Miller, Telza (Smith) 106
Milliken, David 82; Minnie 82
Minich, Mr. and Mrs. Verne E. 164
Monroe, James 166
Montrose 50
Moore, Frances 77; Victoria Adelaide 97
Moorhead, Anna Catherine 82; Frank Turner 82; Henry Custis 82; John 82; John Upshur 82; Martha Custis Williams 82
Moratico Hall 35, 175
Mount Vernon 167
Munford, Lucy Taylor 76
Murray, Sally Scott 50

N

Nandua Creek 69, 143, 155
Nansemond River 112
Nash, Helen Doris 137; Jessie (Bounds) 137; John Clayton 137
Nassawadox Creek 9, 37, 65
Nassawado Plantation 17, 38, 179
Neale, Catherine Teackle 132; Elizabeth Teackle (Smith) 132; William 132
Nelson, Margaret 24, 25, 34, 175; Mary (Temple) 24, 175; Robert 24, 175
Nevett, Mary 48
Nicholas, John Ambler, Jr. 63; Walter Upshur 63
Nores, Adele 126
Nottingham, Elizabeth Parker (Upshur) 65, 79, 169; Frances 64; George Littleton 73, 79; George Upshur 96; Helen 84; John E. 73, 79, 169; John Henry 78, 79;

Nottingham *(continued)*
Richard Volney 96; William J. 96; William Upshur 96

O

O'Carroll, Linda Susan 110; Martin 110
Occohannock Creek 7, 20, 22, 24
Occohannock Plantation 8, 9, 10, 20
Oetgen, Henry Glenn 136
Offley, Anne (Osborne) 178; Robert 178; Sarah 41, 88, 176, 178
Old Town Neck 71
Olmstead, Fontaine Jacqueline 139; Raymond Eldon 139; Sarita Eldon 139
Oliver, Martha Jane 121
O'Neil, Grace 25, 26
Osborne, Anne 178; Sir Edward 178

P

Page, Allison Francis 120; Walter Hines 120
Park, Desiree Upshur Partee 64; William Clarence 64; William Clarence, Jr. 64
Park Hall 74, 99
Parker, Alfred 74; Ann 54, 55, 65, 66, 68, 69, 70, 71, 165; Ann Gertrude (Stratton) 74; Elizabeth (Andrews) 69, 70; Capt. George I 54; Maj. George II 54; George III 54; George IV 54; George V 54, 74; Judge George VI 54, 71, 166; Dr. Jacob G. 74; Lucy 69; Margaret Eyre 71, 72, 73; Margaret (Eyre) 71; Maria Teackle (Savage) 71; Sarah Andrews 74; Sarah (Andrews) 74; Severn Eyre 71, 107; Col. Thomas ("Hangman Tom") 54, 69, 70; Wiley, Jr. 105
Parlee, Elizabeth Jean 81
Parramore, Esther 57, 95; Thomas 86
Pawson, William S. 142
Peale, Sarah M. 167
Pear Plain 55, 151, 152, 162
Peed, Mary Ellen (Dunton) 111; William, J. F. 111
Pembroke 112, 113
Penniman, William 51
Perratt, Ann 56
Perry, Commodore 170
Peter, America Pinckney 79
Peterkin, Elizabeth Spencer 76; Emma (Meteer) 76; William Spencer 76
Phillips, Naomi 119
Pinckard, Charlotte 87
Pinner, Ann Elizabeth 113, 114; Ann (Stoakley) 113; Jeremiah 113
Poag, Martha 136
Pocomoke River 14, 21, 33, 94
Point Farm 22
Pope, Bayard 92; Dorothy 93; George Bayard 92; George Upshur 92, 160; George Upshur, Jr. 93; Mary Eleanor 93; Register 93
Poplar Grove 54
Portwood, Robert 60
Pott, Capt. Ffrancis 11; Mary 26; Susanna (Baker) 29
Powell, Claire Rhoda 136; Clayton L. 136; Joane 28, 175; John 88; Rose 88; Sarah (Yardley) 88
Poythress, George William 140; Jane 56
Preeson, Joseph 22, 179; Susanna 51; Thomas 17
Pritchard, Charles Austin 122; Charles Austin, Jr. 122; Mr. and Mrs. Forrest Archibald 122; Littleton Upshur 122; Penelope Upshur 122
Pruett, Martha Virginia 92
Purnell, Anne 33; Judge Lemuel 33; Mary 33

Q

Quarter Plantation 40, 42, 95
Quarterman, Miss 120
Quay, Mr. and Mrs. Paul Q. 173
Quinby, Aaron 46; Aaron Balderston 46; Elizabeth Walter 47; Georgianna G. (Richardson) 47; Georgianna Richardson 47; Henrietta Chauncey 48; Jessie Marvin 47; Littleton Dennis Teackle 47; Lydia (Balderston) 46; Margaret Upshur 47; Thomas Balderston 47; Upshur Balderston 46, 47

R

Raboteau, Charles Cornelius 120; John Samuel II 120; Mary Stedman 120
Randolph, Edmund 165; John 166; Mary 174; Mary (Isham) 174; William 174
Rappahannock River 3, 175
Read, Edmund 104, 106, 107; Mary 104; Nancy 104
Reifsnider, Anne 50
Revell, Agnes (Burton) 31; Edward 31; John 31; Rachel 31, 32, 33, 34, 40, 85, 102, 151 154; Randall 31

Revell Plantation 32
Richardson, Georgianna G. 46, 47; Margaret B. (Walter) 46; Thomas S. 46
Riddick, Anna Greene 114, 115; Richard 114
Ridgely, Elizabeth Augusta 83
Riley, Mary Eleanor 93
Ringgold, Abel Upshur 69; James Trapier 69, 167; Mary 68; Mary Lee 69; Susan Brown (Upshur) 69; Susan Upshur 69; Tench 68; Thomas 68; Capt. Thomas Lee 68
Risden, Jane 8; Landina 8; Mary (Hardwige) 7, 8, 14, 20; Phillip 7, 8
Robbins, Edward Magruder Addison 99; Floyd Upshur 99; John Page 99; John Page, Jr. 99; Margaret Addison 99
Roberts, George 7; John 7; John H., Jr. 57
Robertson, Maria Elizabeth 88, 94
Robins, Col. Edward 25, 26, 35; John 25, 35; Col. John 25; Joshua 86; Margaret (Teackle) 35; Col. Obedience 25; Rosina 86
Robinson, Anna Barney 135; Anne (Maury) 75; Lenora Blanding 135; Martha Maury 75; Poitiaux 75; Thomas Percival 135
Roby, Florence 116
Roche, Rev. Richard 95
Rodgers, Commander 170
Rohn, Arthur Charles 63
Roper, Harry Hunter 119
Rose Cottage (*illustration*) 102, 33, 68, 102, 104, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 125, 126, 127, 132, 152, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178
Ross, William Warfield 121
Rowles, Elizabeth 182, 183
Ruffin, Mary 98
Rutter, John 141

S

Salt Grove 25, 35
Savage, Bettie 96; Dr. James Michael 96; Maria Teackle 71; Mary Bayly 96; Mary Burton 71; Mary Burton (Savage) 71; Ens. Thomas 36; Thomas Lyttleton 36, 71, 155
Savage's Neck 48
Scarburgh, Capt. Edmund I 26, 177; Col. Edmund II 26, 177, 182; Col. Edmund III 26; Col. Edmund IV 26; Margaret (Custis) 25; Mary 177; Matilda 176, 182; Priscillah 26, 30; Susanna (Upshur) 26; Tabitha 177
Schmidt, Arlyle Mary 62
Scott, Anne Spottswoode 64; Betsy Barton 63; Graham Upshur 64; James Upshur 98; Margaret Anne 98; Marion Upshur 98; Mary Randolph 64; Randolph P. 63; William John 97; William John, Jr. 97; William John III 98
Sea View 133, 141
Secrest, Stella Lenore 81
Selby, Harriet Fleming 143; Sallie T. 143
Selden, Miles 63; Rosalie H. 63
Selma 35, 71, 73, 79, 133, 169, 175
Severn, Jane 44
Seymour, Rev. William 95; William Digby 95
Shepherd, Maria L. (Davis) 60; Maria Louise 60; Samuel 60
Sheringham Hall (*illustration*) 146, 4, 147, 149, 150
Shirley 177
Simmons, Dennis 113, 120; John 113; Martha Jane 113, 118, 119
Simmons' Plantation 118, 120
Smart, John 177; Tabitha Scarburgh 176, 177
Smith, Anne Stockley (Teackle) 133; Anne Upshur 105; Caleb Robinson 105; Catherine (Teackle) 132; Charles 35, 132; Prof. E. Sumpter 47; Eliza Robinson 105; Elizabeth Custis (Teackle) 174; Elizabeth Teackle 132, 133, 141; Elton Bowdoin 57; Francis Hopkinson I 142; Francis Hopkinson II 142; George Robinson 106; Isaac I 35, 174, 177, 178; Isaac II 35, 133, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178; Isaac III 133, 141, 142; John 28, 105; Maj. John 3; John Custis 105; John Upshur 105; Kate A. (Cropper) 57; Leah (Upshur) 105, 106; Louisa Bowdoin 52; Maria (Hopkinson) 133, 142; Mary Louisa 105; Mary Upshur 57; Peter Bowdoin 57; Sallie 83; Sarah 107, 108, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178; Susanna (Custis) 105; Telza 106
Smith's Mill Pond 105
Snow, Lucile 97
Soccohacke, Phillip 8
Soniat, Edwin J. 126; Joel 126; Dr. Theodore Louis Lucien 126; Yvonne 126

Soniat du Fossat, Theodore Louis Lucien, Jr. 126
Southy, Ann 25; Henry 25
Spaulding, Bettina Ann 62; Brynn Wallis 62; Byron Walter 62; Virginia Ann 62
Sperry, Margaret Upshur 81; Richard Parke 81; Simon Willard 81; Simon Willard, Jr. 81
Spiers, Frances Adelaide 134
Stapleford, Raymond 14
Starnell, Richard 7
Steele, Anne B. 48, 50; James 48; Mary (Nevett) 48
Stewart, Banny 89
Stieff, Charles Clinton II 91; Charles Clinton III 91; James Whaley 91; Priscilla Claire 91
Stirling, Anne Lloyd 51; Archibald 50; Archibald, Jr. 50; Arthur Upshur 50; Elizabeth Anne (Welsh) 50; Franklin Anderson 50; James 50; James Edward 50; Virginia Upshur 51
Stith, Lt.-Col. Drury 174; Griffin 174; Maj. John 174; Mary Elizabeth 68, 107, 108, 111, 112, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178; Sarah (Smith) 107, 108; William 107, 108, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178
Stoakley, Ann 113
Stockley, Alexander 43; Anne 130, 141, 144, 182, 183; Catherine 35; Elizabeth 130, 182; Eyre 130, 182, 183; Francis I 182; Francis II 130, 182; Francis III 130, 182, 183; John 130, 182; Sarah 130, 182; William 106
Stone, Capt. William 3, 6, 7
Stott, Amy 18; Ann (Upshur) 15; Bridget 18; Jonathan 15, 16; Jonathan, Jr. 16, 18; Lidia 18; Margaret 18
Stratton, Agnes (Johnson) 32; Ann 32; Ann Gertrude 74; John 74; Lucy (Digges) 74; Thomas 32
Stringer, Grace 35, 51; Thomas 10, 24
Sturges, Josiah Robert 109; Mrs. Josiah R. 161; Mary Upshur 109
Sylvan Retreat 69

T

Tabb, Martha 56
Tanner's Creek 113, 118, 120
Tayloe, Edward D. 83
Taylor, Anne Upshur 100; Margaret 44; William 7; William Cooper 100
Teackle, Anne Stockley 133, 141; Anne Stockley (Upshur) 143; Caleb 25, 30; Catherine 25, 35, 132; Elizabeth 133; Elizabeth Custis 35, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178; Elizabeth (Custis) 35, 43, 175; Elizabeth (Dennis) 46; Elizabeth Upshur 35, 46, 132, 141; Elizabeth (Upshur) 35, 44, 46, 132, 141, 155; George 35; John 25, 30, 34, 46; John II 35, 130, 133, 141; Maj. John 24, 25, 34, 35, 175; Dr. John Upshur 130, 142, 143; Lavinia Upshur 141; Leah 36, 51; Levin 25, 30, 34; Littleton Dennis 44, 46; Margaret 25, 26, 30, 35, 36, 155; Margaret (Nelson) 24, 26; Mary Upshur 141; St. George Williamson 142; Sarah 35; Sarah Upshur 142; Susanna 35, 43; Susanna Brown Upshur 142; Susanna (Upshur) 25, 26, 35; Thomas 39; Thomas II 25, 30, 35, 43, 175, 176, 177; Thomas III 34, 35, 132, 133, 141, 155; Thomas IV 35; Rev. Thomas 15, 24, 25, 34, 156, 175; Thomas Upshur 141, 142; Upshur 25, 30
Teackle Mansion 46
Temple, Dorothy (Lee) 24, 175; Sir John 24, 175; Mary 24, 175
Thomas, Curry 140; John 15; Mary 14; 15; Mary Yerger 126
Thompson, Elizabeth Howard 122; Elizabeth Ridgely 83; George W. 83; George W., Jr. 83; Henry 165; Robert Upshur 123; William Wardlaw, Jr. 122; William Wardlaw III 123
Thorogood, Adam 41, 88, 176, 178; Elizabeth 41, 88, 176, 178; Sarah (Offley) 41, 88, 176
Tilney, Ann (Hinman) 183; Elizabeth 182, 183; Lt.-Col. John 183
Tompkins, Peggy Custis 95
Townsend, Angelo A. 160; Priscilla Ann 90
Trenchard, Dr. Curtis James 79; George E. 79; Margaret Louise 79; Marian 79
Tucker, Judge Beverly 67, 168
Tudor, Elizabeth (Upshur) 15
Tudor Place 127
Turkey Island 174
Turlington, Mr. 58
Tyler, John 160, 165, 166, 167

U

Upchar 146
Upchare 3

Upcher 3, 4, 5, 145, 146, 148, 150; Abbot 146, 148; Abel 4, 5; Anne (Ayre) 4, 145; Arthur v, vii, 3, 4, 5, 145, 146, 149; Caroline Edith Sparke 146, 149; Henry Ramey 146; Mary 148; Peter 148, 149; Robert 148; Susan 148; Thomas 4, 145
Upchur 146
Upchurch 146; Michael 5
Upcott 146; Richard 5
Uppershire 130
Upsal 146
Upsall 5
Upshall 146
Upshar, Diana 5; John 5
Upshaw 5, 146; Jeremiah 5; Thomas 5, 130; William 5; William J. 60
Upshear 146
Upsher 146
Upshere, John 5
Upshire 3, 146
Upshor 3, 146
Upshott 146; Arthur 3, 4, 6, 8, 9, 11, 18; Elizabeth 14; John 14, 15; Sarah 14
Upshur 146; Abel I 10, 17, 18, 24, 28, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 36, 39, 40, 85, 102, 154, 171, 172; Abel II 42, 43, 44, 45, 48, 53, 107, 131, 143; Abel Brown 79, 127; Abel Parker 116; Abel Parker I (*portrait*) Frontispiece, 34, 43, 55, 66, 68, 112, 160, 161, 162, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168; Abel Parker II 58; Abigail 18, 24, 26, 27; Albert Sidney 126; Col. Alfred Parker 76, 77; Alice Brown 140; Ann 13, 15, 17, 43, 44, 45, 86, 91, 105; Ann Elizabeth (Pinner) 113, 114; Ann Emmerson 90; Ann (Emmerson) 34, 87, 93, 94, 95; Ann (Parker) 55, 65, 66, 68, 69, 70, 71, 73, 165; Anna Greene (Riddick) 115; Anna Henderson 115, 116; Anna Stoakley 114; Anne 24, 28, 29, 133; Anne B. (Steele) 50; Anne (Brown) 104, 106, 132; Anne Drewry 65; Anne Elizabeth 56, 71, 133, 140; Anne Floyd ix, 138; Anne Stockley 35, 130, 141, 143; Anne (Stockley) 141, 143, 144; Anne Strange (Wilson) 108, 109, 110, 111; Arthur 42, 87, 95; Arthur I 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 23, 24, 26, 27, 28, 29, 31, 32, 85, 145, 152, 153, 180; Arthur II 7, 11, 13, 15, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 128, 175, 179, 180; Arthur III 18, 24; Arthur IV 30, 32, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 53, 95,
Upshur *(continued)*
102, 103, 152, 153, 157, 158, 159, 160; Arthur V 44, 45, 48, 49, 50; Arthur Bremond 64; Arthur Brown 55, 66, 67, 165; Arthur Downing 100; Arthur Littleton 81; Dr. Arthur Wilson 57; Belle 90; Bessie French 63; Brown 129, 130, 144; Caleb 32, 33, 37, 38, 39, 40, 102, 103, 104, 106, 132, 171, 172, 173; Caleb Brown 43, 55, 65, 66; Capt. Caleb Littleton I (*portrait*) 112, 113, 114, 118, 119; Caleb Littleton II 112, 114, 115, 120; Caleb Littleton III 116, 117; Caleb Littleton IV 117; Carol Martin 137; Caroline Crowder 97, 98, 100; Caroline DeSaussure 138; Caroline DeSaussure (Blanding) 135; Cary Dawson 117; Cary Elizabeth 65; Cary Harrison 98; Catherine Bullock 110; Charles Wingfield 111; Charlotte Pinckard 88; Charlotte Woodley 100; Columbia Wingfield (Williams) 79, 127; Custis Parke 79, 80, 82; David Nash 137; Desiree Gaiennie 64; Dianna DeSaussure 137; Donald Martin 136; Dorothy DeSaussure 136; Edgar Cary 64; Edith 64; Elaine Marie 62; Eleanor Lambert 139; Eleanor Walton 124; Elinor 81; Elizabeth 21, 24, 27, 32, 34, 35, 37, 38, 39, 43, 44, 45, 46, 88, 90, 93, 96, 135, 141, 155; Elizabeth Ann (Faulcon) 111, 125; Elizabeth Anne Brown 68, 111; Elizabeth Brown 104, 106, 132; Elizabeth Brown (Upshur) 132; Elizabeth (Dashiell) 94; Elizabeth Dennis 58; Elizabeth (Gore) 43, 44, 45, 48, 107, 131, 132; Elizabeth Mary 90, 100; Elizabeth Nottingham 76; Elizabeth Parker 55, 65, 73, 79, 169; Elizabeth Porter 90; Elizabeth Sarah 117; Elizabeth Teackle 137; Elizabeth Upshur (Teackle) 132, 133; Elizabeth W. D. 68; Elizabeth (White) 96; Ellen Vaughn Savage 59; Eloise Elam 58; Elsie Yerby 78; Emily Franklin 91; Emily Louise 52; Estelle 127; Florence 140; Florence Adelaide 97; Florence Holland 98; Florence Irving 137; Fontaine Murdock 137; Frances Gretchen 63; Frances Moore 77; Francis Boyer 93; Dr. Francis Whittle 75; Franklin 91; Frederick Engle Mayo 73; Dr. George Littleton 73, 74, 79, 169; George Lyttleton 82, 150; Dr. George Martin I 90, 93; George Martin II 90, 91; George Martin III 91; George Parker

Upshur *(continued)*
61; Cdr. George Parker (*portrait*) 71, 55, 67, 71, 72, 73, 161, 169; Gertrude 68, 82, 136; Gertrude Margaret 81; Gertrude Parker 78; Giles Crowder 98; Giles Crowder, Jr. 98; Gladys Estelle 123; Hamilton Brown 140; Hampden Stith 113, 115, 118, 127; Harold 64; Harrie N. 84; Harrie P. 84; Harriet Saltonstall 111; Harriet Wilson 59; Helen 13, 16; Henry 116; Henry Curtis 81; Henry DeSaussure Blanding 139; Judge Henry Littleton 78; Henry Macon 59; Henry Walker 117; Henry Walker, Jr. 117; Horace 64; Horace Littleton 66; Horace Neale 65; Jacob Parker 75; James I 86, 87, 88; James II 88; James Blanding 135, 136; James Wilmer 90; Jane Pendleton 122; Jean Snow 97; Jewel Whitaker 99; John 21, 36, 43, 48, 65, 91, 106, 131, 132, 133, 134, 180; John I 7, 13, 14, 15, 17, 20; John II 32, 33, 34, 36, 37, 38, 39, 42, 57, 85, 86, 87, 88, 93, 94, 95, 102, 104; Dr. John 55, 69, 70; John Andrews ix, 123; John Andrews, Jr. (*portrait*) 124; John Arthur 64; John Brown I 68, 104, 106, 107, 108, 111, 112, 172, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178; John Brown II 110; John Caleb 133; John D. 111, 125; John Drury Stith 114; John Dupuy 136; John Henry 81; Adm. John Henry (*portrait*) 169, 78, 79, 150, 151, 169, 170; John Irving 137; John Lewis 136; John Littleton 67; Dr. John Nottingham 75, 76; John Parke Custis 81; John Pinckard 88; John Walter 62; Judith Hanes 118; Julia Estelle (Andrews) 121; Juliet 43, 65; Juliet Gertrude 60; Juliet Littleton 58; Karen Marie 62; Kate 82; Kate Marion 80; Laura A. 51; Lawrence Lewis 81; Lawrence Lottier 61; Lawrence Lottier, Jr. 61; Leah 104, 105, 106; Leah Custis 55, 56, 70, 71; Leah (Custis) 41, 43, 53; Lelia 126; Lenora McFaddin 135; Levin 90; Lillian Lottier 61; Lillie Lottier 62; Littleton 117; Littleton I 41, 43, 48, 52, 53, 54, 55, 65, 66, 69, 70, 71, 73, 87, 102, 104, 160, 165; Littleton II 55, 56, 67, 69, 71, 151, 162; Littleton III 59; Littleton IV 60; Louis C. 65; Louisa Jane (Holland) 94; Lovell 67; Lucille Derby 97; Lucretia Anne 100; Lucy 116; Lucy Beverly 77; Lucy Parker 59; Lucy

Upshur *(continued)*
(Parker) 70; Lula May 60; Lysander Royster 99; Lysander Royster, Jr. 99; Mamie 60; Margaret Almira 93; Margaret Costin 99; Margaret Esther 124; Margaret Eyre (Parker) 72, 73; Margaret (Downing) 86, 95; Margaret Mary 62; Margaret Michael 96; Maria Elizabeth (Robertson) 94; Marie Bettina 63; Martha Anne 97; Martha Jane (Simmons) 113, 118, 119; Martha Lee 122; Martha Poag 136; Mary 15, 126, 144; Mary (Clarke) 6, 9, 11, 12, 13, 23, 152; Mary Eliza Neilson 57; Mary Elizabeth 111, 125; Mary Elizabeth (Stith) 68, 107, 108, 111, 112; Mary Ellen 61; Mary Evelina 66; Mary Graham 141; Mary (Hardwige) 8, 20; Mary Jane 125; Mary Jane Stith 54, 109, 161; Mary Juliet 57; Mary Lee 121; Mary Paulina 114; Mary Vaughn (Wilson) 56, 162, 164; Mary W. 96; Maude Allene (Walker) 117; Melville Zacharias 62; Nancy 43; Nancy Elizabeth 62; Nancy Judith 117; Nancy Stoakley 117; Nellie 60; Oscar 64; Otho Mears 98; Paulina 116; Peggy Eyre Parker 73; Priscilla 91; Priscilla Ann 91; Rachel 96, 100; Rachel Revell 57, 94; Rachel (Revell) 29, 32, 33, 34, 40, 85, 102, 151, 154; Rebecca Caroline 136; Robert Ashton 126; Robert Brown 126; Robert Irving 137; Robert Lee 118, 119, 120, 121; Robert Littleton 122; Robert Stith 126; Rosalie Maria 66; Rosina Ellen 92; Rosina Martin 88; Rosina (Robins) 86; Sallie Brown 140; Sallie Hanes 118, 120; Sallie Stith 127; Sallie Teackle Brown 133; Sally 104; Sally Downing 96; Sarah 15, 18, 21, 24, 26, 29; Sarah Andrews (Parker) 74; Sarah (Bell) 129, 130, 144; Sarah Brown 143; Sarah (Browne) 18, 21, 22, 23, 24, 26, 27, 28, 31, 128, 175, 179; Sarah D. 87, 95, 100; Sarah Parker 77; Sarita Reed 140; Stella Andrews 122; Steven Lawrence 62; Susan 92, 168; Susan Brown 68, 69; Susan Ruffin 98; Susanna 17, 18, 24, 25, 26, 32, 33, 34, 35, 37, 38, 68, 93, 95, 101, 175; Thomas I 23, 24, 30, 31, 128, 129, 130, 144, 179; Thomas II 129, 130, 131, 141, 143, 144, 182, 183; Thomas Brown 132; Dr. Thomas Harold Wilson 58, 60, 111; Thomas Hawkins 59; Thomas Little-

Upshur *(continued)*
ton 56, 59; Thomas Melville 62; Thomas Stockley 130, 143; Thomas Teackle I 133, 141; Thomas Teackle II (*portrait*) 134, ix, 4, 7, 11, 23, 25, 60, 102, 104, 107, 126, 130, 134, 135, 183; Thomas Teackle III 139; Dr. Thomas Teackle IV 136; Thomas Teackle V 137; Thomas Wilson 110, 125; Virginia 50, 67; Virginia Lillie 61; Walter Shepherd 61, 63; Walter Shepherd, Jr. 63; (William) Arthur Downing 96; William Bell Eyre 144; William Blanding 136; William Brown I 132; William Brown II 140; William Brown III 135; William Brown IV 136; William J. 64; William Johnston 93; William Major 96; William Major, Jr. 97; William Michael 87, 95, 96; Gen. William Peterkin (*portrait*) 76; William Stith 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 172; Wilmer 93
Upshur Row 73
Upshur's Bay 13, 53, 152
Upshur's Neck 3, 6, 10, 11, 12, 13, 21, 22, 31, 40, 44, 46, 48, 49, 51, 52, 86, 131, 152
Upshurshire 130, 134, 143

V

Vandeventer Josephine 142; William 142
Vaucluse (*illustration*) 53, 40, 48, 52, 53, 54, 55, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 102, 104, 107, 111, 112, 152, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 166, 181
Vaughn, Mary 55
von Isakovics, Alois 109; Alois, Jr. 110; Alois III 110; Anne 110; Johannah 110; John 110; Marie Aloisia 109; Mary Upshur (Sturges) 109; Paul 110; Rosa Ann 110

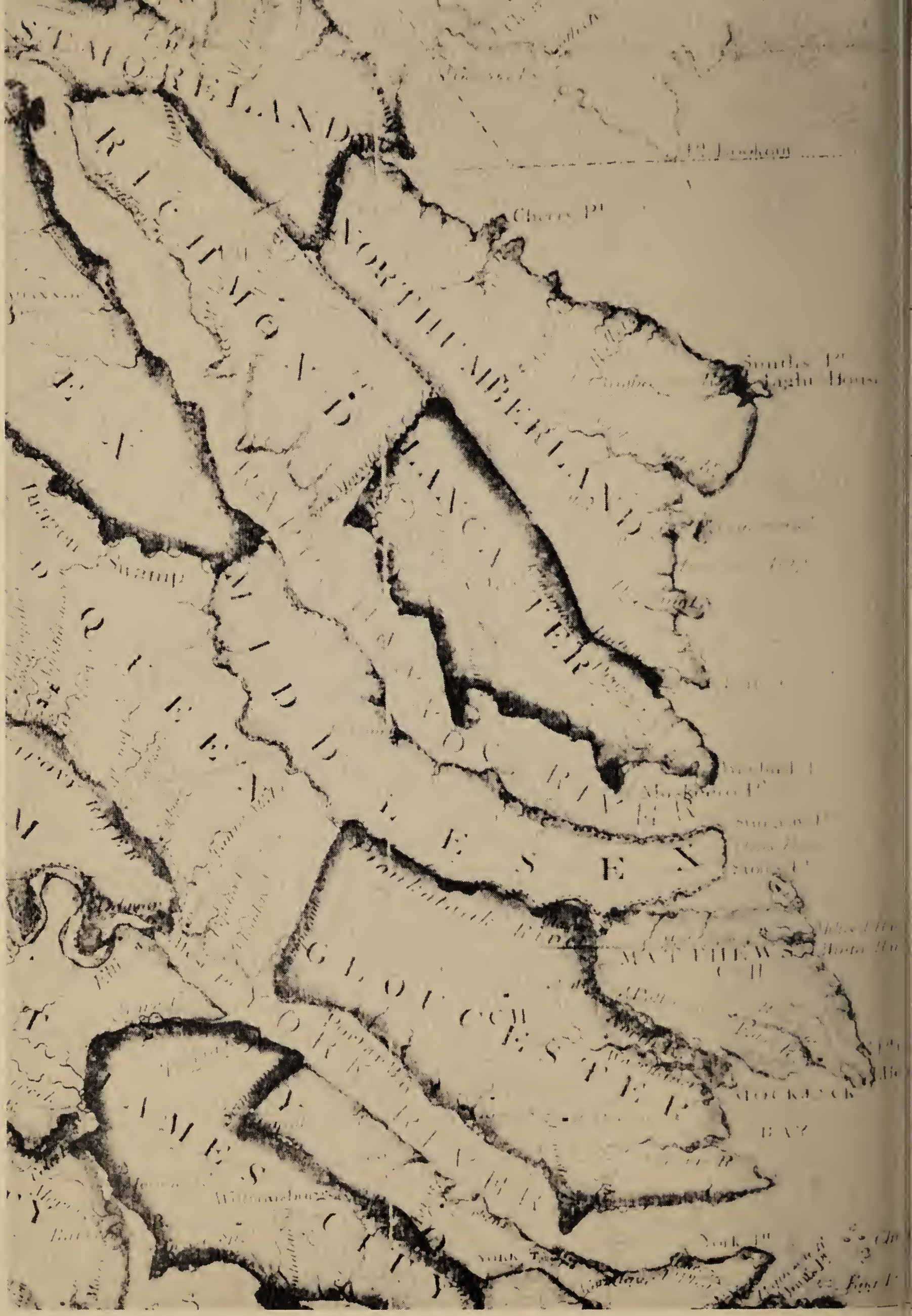
W

Walker, Florence (Roby) 116; Henry Han 116; Maude Allene 116, 117; Maj. Thomas 3
Walston, Anne (Bagwell) 77; Christine Newton 77; Thomas Cottingham 77; William 77
Walter, Estelle 50; Margaret B. 46
Walton, Eleanor Eve 124; Frances 124; George 124; Robert 124
Warehouse Creek 125
Warwick (*illustration*) 6, 3, 6, 13, 22, 23, 31, 32, 40, 41, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 53, 54, 85, 86, 102, 104, 107, 128, 132, 151, 152, 153, 154, 171, 181
Washington, George 41, 79, 80, 127; Martha (Dandridge) 79, 127
Watchapreague Creek 37, 103
Waters, Abigail (Upshur) 27, 30; Lt. Edward 25, 26; Elizabeth 27; Francis Hutchins 34; Grace (O'Neil) 25; Richard 26, 27; Sarah 27; Sarah Anne 94; William 26, 27; Lt.-Col. William I 26; William IV 40
Waters River 26
Watkins, Evelina Sarah 124; Florence 135
Watson, Mary 128; Robert 128
Webster, Daniel 167
Welsh, Elizabeth Anne 50
Wesley 95
West, Anne 182; Anthony 177, 182, 183; Elizabeth (Rowles) 183; Frances (Yardley) 35, 175; Capt. Francis 176; Lt.-Col. John 176, 177, 182; Maj. John 35, 175, 176, 178; Mary Scarburgh 130, 182, 183; Matilda (Scarburgh) 176; Sarah 35, 174, 177, 178
Westcott, Joshua Byron 135
Weston, Elizabeth 177
Whaley, James Benton 91; Priscilla Upshur 91
Whitaker, Elizabeth Hampden 118; Fenton Jennys 117; John Richard 117; John Richard, Jr. 117; John Richard III 118; Nancy Upshur 118
White, Elizabeth 96; Joseph 96
White Cliff 48, 50, 51
Whitelaw, Ralph T. ix, 138, 153
Whittington, Elizabeth (Weston) 177; Tabitha Scarburgh 28, 176, 177; Tabitha Scarburgh (Smart) 176; Capt. William 177; Col. William 176, 177
Whittle, Emily Cary (Fairfax) 75; Rt. Rev. Francis M. 75; Lucy Tucker 75
Wilcox, Dr. Edward 60; Virginia D. 60
Williams, America Pinckney (Peter) 79; Columbia Wingfield 79, 127; Ira 58; Katharine Alicia 79; Martha Custis 79; Capt. William George 79
Wilson, Abigail (Upshur) 27; Anne Strange 108, 109, 110, 111; David 27; Emma 142; Ethlyn 91; Dr. James 27; Lucy Eleanor 124; Margaret S. 95; Mary Vaughn 55, 56, 162, 164; Mary (Vaughn) 55; Peggy

Wilson *(continued)*
Custis (Tompkins) 95; Thomas 55, 108, 142; William W. 95
Wilsonia 28, 29, 40
Wilsonia Neck 7
Winder, Mary Catherine 101; Nathaniel James 101; Dr. Richard Bayly 101; Sarah Caroline 101; Sarah M. (Custis) 101; William N. J. 101
Wirt, William 165, 166; Mrs. William 166
Wise, Hon. George Douglas 111; Hon. Henry A. 111; John S. 83; John S., Jr. 83
Woodcock, Carolyn Upshur 139; Claire Dunne 139; Clarence Wesley 139; Clarence Wesley, Jr. 139
Woodside, Mr. 52
Woodward, Alfred Eno 122; Anne Pendleton 122; David Coleman 122; Robert Upshur 122
Worrel, Betty 138
Wright, Edith Stevenson 167
Wye House 152
Wye River 50
Wysocki, Wanda Violet 62

Y

Yardley, Col. Argoll I 176; Argoll II 88, 175, 176, 178; Frances 35, 175, 176, 178; Sir George 176; Sarah (Michael) 88, 175; Temperance (Flowerdew) 176
Yerby, Ann Elizabeth 78; Elizabeth Upshur (Teackle) 132, 133; Dr. George 36, 132; Dr. George Teackle 132
Young, Edward J. 172; Emma Gertrude 119; John R. 118; John R., Jr. 119; Margaret Elizabeth 119; Marie Louise 119; Murray H. 118; Raymond Giraud 119; Royden W. 118; Sallie Hanes (Upshur) 118; Sallie Virginia 119



NORTHUMBERLAND
Cheers Pt
Swamp
GLOUCESTER
MATTHEWS
BAY

EASTERN AND WESTERN SHORES OF VIRGINIA

Part of a map by Wm. Davis, published in 1807
Original in Library of Congress
Note "Upshurs Neck" and "Upshires" on Church Neck